

S2 Insert 01

^

^

#Sphe

*

*

Dad: "you've been smiling on your own the whole night Sphe, are you going crazy?"

Nathan: "his been like this since we got back from Izimbali after he met that girl"

Me: "I'm not your friend Nathan" I threw a pillow at him he ran to hide behind mom

Mom: "I thought you were dating Snakho"

Me: "I am" mom and dad looked at each other "I'm going to my room" I stood up

Mom: "bath and brush your teeth before sleeping" Nathan laughed while I huffed like I'm 22 and I work but I'm still treated as a baby I still thank God Avery had Nathan other wise mom would still be treating me even worse than she is right now

Dad: "when are you leaving?"

Me: "you want me out of your house already" he chuckled

Dad: "yes"

Mom: "ayi Mntungwa leave my son alone, you can stay as long as you want baby and I still say you need to find a job this side so you can be home" we've had this conversation since I got my internship at eskom in mpumalanga right after I finished it they offered me a job and I took it she wasn't happy I was the last of her children to leave home she cried and slept with me the night I was going to leave the following morning she insisted that she goes to Mp with me

Me: "goodnight family" I kissed her cheek "I love you mom"

Mom: "love you too my boy" let's not forget that I am not a boy I'm a 22 years old circumcised man with a house and two cars but hey when it comes to themba lika Mntungwa I'm still just a boy I went up to my room kicked off my sneakers then threw myself on the bed I decided to call her

Amelia: "hello" her voice was so smooth and light

Me: "hey it's me, Sphe" there was silence I didn't know what was happening "Sphe khumalo we met earlier on" now I was starting to think shit just gives out her number to any random person she meets

Amelia: "uhm yes I remember you just that I wasn't expecting you to call now" I got a little confused like was I supposed to not call today

Me: "I couldn't help myself I just needed to hear your voice before I sleep"

Amelia: "oh" and silence again

Me: "Is there something wrong?"

Amelia: "can I call you back a little later I'm in the study with my siblings it study time"

Me: "okay cool I'll be waiting for you call. Bye for now"

Amelia: "bye"

Me: "and oh Amelia"

Amelia: "hhu?"

Me: "your voice is as beautiful as you are" I bit my bottom lip just after saying that it sounded too cheesy, she giggled before ending the call. I stood went to the bathroom took a quick shower brushed my teeth got in my pjs then went to bed I was about to doze off when snakho called

Me: "hey baby"

Snakho: "love been waiting for your call"

Me: "sorry you know how it is when I'm home"

Snakho: "I miss you already" I chuckled

Me: "you saw me just last night anyway I'm coming back Sunday"

Snakho: "how is mom and dad"

Me: "mom is mom busy treating me like a kid she did my washing earlier" we laugh

Snakho: "I miss them" Snakho and I have been together for about two year now I met her in Mp things between us moved fast she's met my family they all love her

Me: "I asked you to ask for time off at work you would be here right now" maybe I wouldn't be tripping over a 16 year old if my girl was here

Snakho: "but I just asked for time off when we went to sun city last month"

Me: "well it is what it is my love" my phone beeped signaling an incoming call it was Amelia "babe I have to go dad just got in my room"

Snakho: "okay I love you"

Me: "love you too" I dropped the call and answered Amelia "hey beautiful" she giggled

Amelia: "I called you back"

Me: "I see and I'm glad, are you done studying?"

Amelia: "yes"

Me: "I love your voice" she giggled softly

Amelia: "thank you I love yours"

Me: "what are you doing tomorrow?"

Amelia: "I don't have plans"

Me: "can I take you out for lunch?"

Amelia: "yes I'd love that" I jumped off the bed started doing the gwara gwara that's my happy dance
"are you okay you breathing heavily?"

Me: "no babe I'm cool I mean I'm okay" I threw myself on the bed jumping a little

Amelia: "okay. I have to go now"

Me: "why?" I wanted to listen to her voice more

Amelia: "at risk of sounding like a baby, dada is about to come tuck me in" I tried to not laugh but I failed miserably I ended up laughing loudly "you see!"

Me: "okay I'm sorry I just wasn't expecting that"

Amelia: "I'm still his baby"

Me: "I understand mom is the same"

Amelia: "that's bad means you a mama's boy like my brother" I chuckled

Me: "not really"

Amelia: "I have to go" she whispered

Me: "goodnight I'll see you tomorrow around midday"

Amelia: "goodnight" she dropped the call when I heard a man's voice

.

#Amelia

*

*

I woke up a little excited over my lunch date with Sphe I hadn't ever been on a date before this was my very first all the guys that approached I didn't like well only a selected few were brave enough to approach me. With uncles like I have every guy around home and at school knew not to mess with Brian James's daughter. I got off the bed made it went to the bathroom washed my face and brushed my teeth went downstairs I could hear voices in the kitchen I found Brianna and Sihle aunty Sne's spoilt brat she and Brianna were the same Sihle was gorgeous she had uncle Vuyani's face structure her mother's skin colour and body but she wasn't big big just cute chubby Marcel had her crush on her but he knew better than to try anything we were all raised as one and she was the same age as Brianna even mama would freak out not to mention uncle vuyani and dad

Me: "when did you get here"

Sihle: "we landed just after midnight" I made myself cereal

Me: "aunty and uncle are also here"

Sihle: "yeah at home though I slept over" I sat on the hair chair started

Brianna: "we going out want to come with us"

Me: "who you going with"

Sihle: "dada and daddy are coming with us" I laughed shaking my head

Me: "no thank you and I have plans"

Marcel: "what plans?" He asked getting in

Sihle: "hi Marcel" he stopped moving he hadn't seen her he stared at her with his open before rushing out I laughed "what did I do?"

Me: "oh nothing Nosihle" we continued eating Marcel came back he had taken out his bracelets I chuckled

Marcel: "hey Nosihle" she smiled

Sihle: "you good?"

Marcel: "yep" he made himself cereal and sat opposite us "so what plans do we have?"

Brianna: "we going out for movies and dinner with dada and daddy"

Marcel: "oh ja"

Me: "why you tryna be cool"

Marcel: "what did I do"

Me: "mhm I see you"

Marcel: "whatever" mom got in followed by dad

Them: "morning kids" dada kissed all our heads

Mama: "we having cereal today"

Sihle: "yep"

Me: "can I go out for lunch with Tracy"

Dada: "we also going to the mall I'll drop you off and pick you up we'll meet Tracy there"

Me: "the driver can drop me off dada after we pick her up"

Dada: "no"

Me: "mama please I never get to go with just my friends, why do I have to be the girl that her father has to meet my friends before leaving? Like dada you do this all the time"

Dada: "okay I guess you not going anywhere"

Me: "you can't be serious"

Dada: "as a heart attack"

Me: "mama"

Mama: "Brian let the child go she's going to the mall the driver will drop her off and pick her up when she's done" she was busy frying things on the stove

Dada: "zama" she turned to face him

Mama: "how do you want your eggs babe" he walked to her and held her waist he whispered something mama giggled "a.a Brian"

Dada: "you can go Amelia I want you home before 17:30"

Me: "thank you"

Sihle: "what time are we leaving dada?"

Dada: "after lunch"

Brianna: "are we gonna do some shopping dada" Brianna was addicted to shopping mama says I was once like her but I doubt

Dada: "if you want to" Brianna and sihle high fived

Mama: "no shorts Brianna you have enough of those"

Brianna: "yes mama"

Marcel: "so everyone is going out but me"

Sihle: "you have your video games Marcel"

Mama: "you can come to the spa with and aunty Sne" I laughed while Marcel turned red from embarrassment

Marcel: "mama stop" he walked out I laughed

Mama: "what's wrong with my baby Brian"

Dada: "how should I know love" he kissed her cheek I left them in the kitchen I got to my room grabbed my phone from the bedside I had 5 missed calls from Sphe I found myself smiling like an idiot I called him back he answered just after one ring

Sphe: "morning beautiful" my stupid voice disappeared there was just something about his voice

.

#Marcel

*

*

I watched her dancing with my little sister in her room the way her cute chubby body moved Brianna said something she laughed sweetly shaking her head then said something in return I was peaking through the key hole I know I was being a perve but Nosihle made me feel weird like she lit up my world like nobody else

Mama: "boy what you doing?!" I stood up straight pushed my hair back

Me: "they won't open I think Brianna stole my iPod"

Mama: "where is your phone? bayanda has been trying to call you he has rugby tickets and his coming to pick you up"

Me: "okay I'll go get ready"

Mama: "put your braces on Marcel"

Me: "but mama I don't like them"

Mama: "I thought you wanted straight teeth now go put them on"

Me: "yes mama"

Mama: "stop peaking on your little sisters it's weird" she walked to her room this is why I had to get over Sihle she was my little sister that's how we were raised all of us as siblings I peaked one last time she was standing in front of the mirror looking at her amazing round firm ass I walked to my room threw myself on the bed I had a boner and my dick hurt like hell

.

#Amelia

*

*

I took one last look at myself on the mirror I was wearing blue denim shorts with a white t-shirt tucked in loosely and white platform heels my weave left lose my hair was long and curly but it didn't have volume so I preferred a weave. I took my handbag walked downstairs found my brothers drinking beer

Bandile: "go change"

Me: "what?!"

Bayanda: "you heard him Amelia you not leaving this house in those shorts"

Me: "they not even short"

Bandile: "Amelia go change now"

Me: "God!!" I went up to my room changed the shorts into a ripped boyfriend jean then went downstairs Marcel had joined them

Bandile: "perfect"

Me: "whatever" I walked out found the driver already waiting for me I got in the backseat on the jeep he drove off to gateway I was chatting to Tracy the whole way when we got to gateway he dropped me off I walked to Dros I found Sphe seated outside he stood up when he saw me he looked so gorgeous in ripped jeans white shirt tucked in and sneakers

Sphe: "you look gorgeous" we hugged he smelt amazingly we pulled apart he kissed my cheek and pulled the chair for me he put it back after I had seated he waved the waiter over "what will you drink Amelia"

Me: "fruit cocktail and a bottle of water on the side with an empty glass" the waiter nodded and left

Sphe: "can't believe you here" I smiled

Me: "yeah well here I am" I was looking at the menu when I brought my eyes up I found him staring at me with a smile on his face "what?"

Sphe: "you really beautiful Ms James"

Me: "thank you"

Sphe: "so grade 11 hhu"

Me: "yep and you"

Sphe: "I work"

Me: "you don't look like the working type"

Sphe: "how does the working type look"

Me: "grown"

Sphe: "how old do you think I am"

Me: "maximum 19" he chuckled his green eyes twinkling

Sphe: "here I am thinking I look grown, I'm actually 22"

Me: "not bad"

Sphe: "indeed" the waiter came back we placed our orders "so where is your twin"

Me: "his not exactly my twin we just born the same year"

Sphe: "oh your dad was busy hhu" I chuckled

Me: "they can't keep their hands off each other even now it actually disturbing"

Sphe: "my parents are the same"

Me: "so where you work?"

Sphe: "Eskimo emalahleni"

Me: "as in Mp" he nodded I heard the trumpet turning into a sad tune

Sphe: "don't frown I'm usually here for weekends and at home we celebrate literary everything birthdays anniversaries mother's day father's day I mean everything so I'm here almost all the time"

Me: "I wasn't frowning I have no reason to frown"

Sphe: "ncooh ain't you just adorable" he pulled my cheek I smacked his hand

Me: "I'm not a baby"

Sphe: "I'd like for you to be my baby" he bit his bottom lip his lips were thick and pinkish little wet "want me to kiss you" I looked down I could feel my cheeks heating up he chuckled softly

Me: "didn't mean to stare"

Sphe: "I have no problem with you staring babe" he lifted my face to face him with my chin and winked I couldn't help the goofy smile that showed up I looked away shaking my head his phone rang he took it out "excuse me" he stood up and walked a bit far from our table I got a chance to stare at him I got an sms from mama while staring at him

I'd suggest you come home because I know you not with Tracy I just saw her in her yard and you know your father will show up wherever you are to check on you

I called her she picked up

Mama: "Amelia"

Me: "I'm sorry"

Mama: "you should be. I thought we were honest with each other just come home before you get in trouble with your father you should have been honest with me Amelia you know I would have spoken to your father"

Me: "as if he was even going to ever allow me to leave the house mama you know him" she sighed

Mama: "just come home your father just left they going to gateway"

Me: "I'm coming" I dropped the call as our food came Sphe came back

Sphe: "sorry about that"

Me: "it okay and I have to go"

Sphe: "we just got here"

Me: "my father is here with my uncle and my little sisters believe me you don't want to meet my father" and he has a tracker on me

Sphe: "gateway is huge and they wouldn't come to Dros with kids"

Me: "can we just go please" he called over the waiter asked him to pack our food and give him the bill when we got our food we left

.

#sphe

*

*

I watched her laughing at my stupid joke she looked so care free and gorgeous she had her jeans pulled up and was walking barefoot water hitting her ankles every now and then we ended up going to the beach I wasn't ready to let her go just yet her phone wouldn't stop ringing she ended up switching it off that alone had me thinking what kind of a girl is this that has her phone ringing like she's a drug dealer she was still laughing when I grabbed her arm making her look at me I moved few strands of her weave from her face she smiled I cupped her face being talk as I am I had to bend she looked at my lips before standing on her toes to meet me halfway I pressed my lips on hers she breathed out I pulled her bottom lip between mine we kissed she cupped my face I held her waist bringing her closer to my body she let out a soft moan and I knew I was fucked

Insert 2

^

^

#Marcel

*

*

I loved my brothers God I loved them but if they made fun of me one more time I was going to call mama and go home the match was finished so we were at dropkicks having dinner they were drinking obviously

Bayanda: "all I'm saying is that you different from us Marcel" of course I was different they were raised by our late grandparents and I was raised by mama

Bandile: "his soft mama's boy"

Me: "I'm gonna go home"

Bandile: "you can't even drive" I rolled my eyes and took a small bite of my burger

Bayanda: "Still no girlfriend"

Me: "don't need one"

Bandile: "at 16 I was overly experienced with sex"

Me: "not everything is about sex"

Bayanda: "I'm going to hook you up"

Me: "you should hook Manson up and watch Lisa go on dates" he clenched his jaws Lisa was not even allowed to have guy friends fuck that she was in varsity she was forced to go to ukzn because there was no way she was going to be out of Durban

Bayanda: "you not being funny" I chuckled

Bandile: "don't talk like that about your niece"

Me: "but.."

Bandile: "no!"

Me: "don't gang up on me" they laughed my phone rang it was mama "hello mama"

Mama: "come home baby it late"

Me: "okay" she hung up "you have to take me home it's late" they laughed Bandile waved over our waiter and asked for the bill

Bayanda: "fucking mama's boy zama is ruining you"

Me: "whatever" Bandile paid we left

Bandile: "you need a girlfriend you need to fuck someone"

Me: "I'm fine"

Bandile: "there's never been a 16 year old virgin in the James sons you the first"

Me: "can you just stop Bandile I'll tell mama I swear"

Bandile: "okay okay I'm joking don't go telling your mama she will tell dad and I'll never hear the end of it" bayanda chuckled

Bayanda: "don't lie stupid shit it ain't about dad you scared of zama"

Bandile: "true she'll kill when it comes to her kids" they laughed

Bayanda: "remember Brianna" we all laughed Brianna was 3 back at that time Bandile was playing with her throwing her up she slipped through his hands and landed on the floor I've never seen mama beat someone like the way she did Bandile that day dada stood back and watched

Bandile: "I never want to go through that again"

Me: "where's penny right now?"

Bandile: "France" she was traveling with her cousins for the whole year

Me: "think I'll also traveling I'm done with high school"

Bayanda: "think zama will let you"

Me: "probably not but I'll ask dada"

Bayanda: "if you really serious about it speak to dad first"

Bandile: "yeah" we got home they didn't get in just dropped me off on the driveway and left. I went in found Sihle in the lounge I was about to turn when she waved so I went to sit next to her

Me: "where's everyone?"

Sihle: "Brianna is asleep she got a tooth ache, the parents are on the patio and Amelia is in her room"

Me: "why you sitting her by yourself?" She shrugged her shoulders and looked at me I looked away I couldn't look at her beautiful eyes

Sihle: "I'm not sleepy don't want to sit by myself in my room"

Me: "I can sit with you"

Sihle: "okay"

Me: "I'm gonna go let mama know I'm back I'll meet you there" she nodded I went out to the patio thinking about where the fuck I just got the courage to do that I got outside found my parents with uncle Siya and aunty Mbali along with sihle's parents they were drinking besides aunty Sne she was pregnant I greeted

Mama: "come here baby you've been gone the whole day" I walked to her she gave me a soft peck "how was your day with your brothers"

Me: "cool as usual"

Mama: "I missed you"

Vuyani: "stop making this boy soft zama"

Mama: "don't start with me"

Me: "I'm going in"

Sne: "your little sisters are still up?"

Me: "sihle is" she nodded

Sne: "tell her to sleep it late"

Me: "I will" I kissed mama on her cheek "I love you mama"

Mama: "love you too baby goodnight" dada kissed my head

Dada: "love you"

Me: "love you" I went in practically ran to sihle's room I found her on the bed busy with her iPad I threw myself next to her she giggled

Sihle: "you gonna break my bed"

Me: "I'll buy you a new one" she just smiled shaking her head "how are things miss Beverly hills" she pushed me lightly

Sihle: "don't call me that"

Me: "you beautiful" she looked at me weirdly "sorry" I got off the bed she smiled

Sihle: "thank you"

Me: "uhm yeah goodnight"

Sihle: "don't go just yet"

Me: "nosihle"

Sihle: "I know, daddy will kill you" it was my turn to look at her weirdly "you like me more than you should" I looked down before going out of her room like it on fire I half ran to my room I locked the door behind me like what the fuck was that she's 12 she shouldn't be able to see these things. I threw myself on the bed I took out my phone I had texts from Tracy that girl was starting to annoy me

.

#Sphe

*

*

I just had to see her before I left knowing that I won't be back anytime soon was killing me knowing how my heart is I knew I might just come home next week instead of spending the weekend with Snakho

Mom: "where your mind at?" I looked at my beautiful mom she might have no given birth to me but I was hers just like my siblings were. I got off the bar stool walked to her and opened my arms she smiled getting in them her tiny body disappearing

Me: "I'm gonna miss you mommy"

Mom: "so will I Sphe" I kissed her head "let go of me so I can finish packing you some bakes goods I don't want you driving at night" I kissed her head one more time than let go

Me: "I'll get my luggage" I went up to my room took my things went to put it in my car then went back to the kitchen

Mom: "I'm done" she gave me 4 big bowls 2 with muffins 1 with chocolate chip cookies and the other with red velvet cupcakes she woke up early and baked

Me: "thank you" I kissed her cheek took them to my car she followed me out "dad not back yet?"

Mom: "I don't know what's wrong with the man I told him to be back before 13:00 but you know how it is when his with that twin of his" I chuckled I'm sure they were too occupied with their soccer

Me: "it okay I'll call him"

Mom: "you can go pass your dad's house see your cousins Sarah says they haven't seen you in awhile"

Me: "some other time mom" she leaned down gave her a soft peck "I love you"

Mom: "love you too, drive safe please and call"

Me: "will do" I got in my car hooted before driving off I called Amelia

Amelia: "hello" I could never get enough of how sweet her voice was

Me: "can I see you please ? I'm leaving and I want to see you"

Amelia: "I can't my parents are home"

Me: "Amelia I'm going back to Mp I won't be back anytime soon I need to see you" there was silence for few seconds

Amelia: "okay I'll meet you by the intersection where I met you the first time"

Me: "okay love I'll call you when I'm entering the estate"

Amelia: "okay" she hung up I drove with a smile on my face.

I saw her walking towards the car wearing black denim shorts and a low cut vest with flip flops her weave left loose she was gorgeous and it was flawless her hips swayed as she walked a little faster I got out the net her halfway I scooped her up in a hug she giggled throwing her head back

Me: "kiss me" she brought her face down we kissed her lips her soft and cold tasted like orange popsicle I put her down not letting go of her lips I buried my hand in her weave deepened the kiss she sucked on my tongue I felt all my blood rushing straight to my dick with one hand I grabbed her full tight ass pressing her pussy directly on my dick she moaned I nearly came if I was still a teenager with no control my jeans would be wet right now she nibbled on my tongue my body shivered a little a car hooted we pulled apart her face turned red

Amelia: "aunty Sne" the woman shook her head

Her: "you know if your father or uncles drive pass her his dead right"

Amelia: "yes"

Her: "get in" Amelia looked down her aunt sighed "then move don't just make out on the street like fools" she drove off Amelia breathed out

Me: "we should move"

Amelia: "I should go home"

Me: "not yet" I held her waist we kissed again shortly

Amelia: "can we get in at least" I opened the back door for her then got in behind her I sat down then pulled her to sit on me

Me: "all your family stay here?" She shook her head

Amelia: "no not really"

Me: "I'm gonna miss you"

Amelia: "then come back this weekend" she kissed my chin

Me: "I might just come back, will you be able to sneak away? We can spend the whole weekend together" she laughed

Amelia: "dada would kill you and bury you in our back yard and plant flowers on top"

Me: "that's extreme. How strict is your family?"

Amelia: "I have a tracker in my body" I raised my eyebrow she giggled "we all do the kids, mama and my aunts"

Me: "is your father some kind of gangster" I knew my uncles were and my grandfather was the most feared and respected one but he passed away now

Amelia: "no his just paranoid they all paranoid"

Me: "good last thing I need is to be dodging bullets because I fell for a gangster's daughter"

Amelia: "you falling for me?"

Me: "deeper with every passing day" she looked down smiling I held her chin making her face me "I know it crazy I just met you on Friday it's Sunday now but I'm so fucking taken it crazy"

Amelia: "Sphe don't play with my heart"

Me: "I wouldn't dream of it"

Amelia: "good because dada and my uncles will come after you" we laughed I brushed my lips on hers

Me: "you taste like orange"

Amelia: "I was eating a popsicle on my way to you"

Me: "I'd love to see you suck on it" her eyes went wide "my girl has naughty thoughts?"

Amelia: "I've never done that"

Me: "done what baby"

Amelia: "the sex thing" I felt a level of possessive over this young lady sitting on top of me

Me: "you a virgin baby?" She nodded looking down I cupped her face kissed her as if my life depended on it when I pulled back she breathing heavily "you perfect in every way and knowing you haven't been touch baby it driving me crazy makes wanna never leave your sight"

Amelia: "then don't leave" she breathed out

Me: "I have to"

Amelia: "those look nice" I chuckled

Me: "take" she reached over and took out one cup cake she took a bite and closed her eyes moaning I licked her top lip

Amelia; "I'm tryna enjoy here"

Me: "so am I"

Amelia: "stop licking me"

Me: "I like your shorts" she smiled

Amelia: "thank you"

Me: "they fit you perfectly" I ran my fingers up the few centimeters of fabric before reaching her pussy she stopped eating and stared at me with curiosity written all over her face a red Lamborghini Gallardo went flying past us

Amelia: "that's my dada"

Me: "fantastic car"

Amelia: "I should go home Sphe"

Me: "I still wanna be with you"

Amelia: "you gonna miss me?"

Me: "a lot"

Amelia: "I'll also miss you a lot"

Me: "maybe one day you can come visit me" she giggled

Amelia: "maybe"

Me: "think your dada will ever let you out of his sight" she sighed

Amelia: "no never"

Me: "give me your phone" she took it out of her pocket "why you got a password"

Amelia: "I have a 12 year old sister who doesn't know what privacy means"

Me: "put your head on my chest" she did I brushed back her weave then started taking pictures of us she laughed when I licked the side of her face I managed to get beautiful ones "now when you miss me you can just look at our pictures or face time me"

Amelia: "what about when you miss me"

Me: "you will send me the pictures when you get home" I kissed her forehead

Amelia: "are we like in a relationship now" I smiled while nodding she smiled brightly "okay" I kissed her she kissed me back hard pressing her body on mine I put my hand under her short when I touched her pussy her body shook I pulled back from the kiss

Me: "your panties are soaked" she looked away "don't be embarrassed baby it's fucking hot you just made my dick harder" her eyes went wider as she moved off me fast hitting her head on the seat I laughed "baby come here" I pulled her to me

Amelia: "ouch" I rubbed her head

Me: "why you running"

Amelia: "I don't know" we laughed "you were speaking about your penis I freaked out" I took her hand pressed it on top of my dick she swallowed and tried removing it I let her "ha.a Sphe that thing is huge" I chuckled

Me: "I'll take that a compliment" she shook her head

Amelia: "I need to go Sphe or I'll get in trouble" I cupped her face kissed her

Me: "I'll drop you off closer to home"

Amelia: "the gate has cameras"

Me: "I'll drop you off closer not directly there"

Amelia: "okay" we moved to the front I drove off "Sphe"

Me: "yes baby"

Amelia: "you very handsome"

Me: "and you really beautiful"

Amelia: "stop by that house" I stopped we kissed shortly

Me: "I'll call you okay"

Amelia: "okay"

Me: "send me those pictures. I love you" she smiled widely

Amelia: "I love you" I gave her a soft peck she got off the car "don't stare at my ass" she walked off leaving me laughing

Me: "walk slower baby!" She laughed shaking her head I watched her until she got in the gate then I turned and drove off.

Being a speed freak that I am and knowing shortcuts to Mp meant I didn't have to drive through Jhb within 6 hours I was driving in my garage I got off the car took my things went in the house through the kitchen there were pots on the stove and tv was playing

Me: "Snakho" I left the bowls on the counter "Snakho!"

Snakho: "I'm here" I walked to my room found her coming out the bathroom she jumped on me I lifted her up she wrapped her legs around my waist "you home" she kissed me I walked to the bed put her down then got between her legs she pushed me back "you smell different"

Me: "I was home" I kissed her neck while unbuttoning her dress "you didn't tell me you will be here"

Snakho: "thought I'd surprise you I missed you" I took off her dress and smiled she was wearing matching red lace underwear "I got dressed up for you baby"

Me: "I see and I'm glad" I ran my hand down her flat stomach she pulled off my t-shirt and started working on my jeans I kicked off my sneakers "how badly did you miss me"

Snakho: "like I want you in me hard and fast badly" I couldn't help the grin that showed on my face

Me: "as you wish baby" I undid her bra for the first time in our relationship I noticed that her breasts are not perky and full like how Amelia's are I shook my head

Snakho: "you okay baby"

Me: "yeah" I went back to her face we kissed while I played with her nipples her moans didn't make my body shiver she pushed down my boxer I got out of them she held my dick massaging the tip I thought about how freaked Amelia was just by touching it over my jeans I rolled us over she got on top of me I got a condom from the drawer when she ripped it open with her teeth I put all thoughts of Amelia back of my mind she sank down letting me go all in and cried out as her back arched

I played with her braids she was laying on top of me after we both climaxed

Snakho: "how was the drive back?"

Me: "fast, how did you get here?"

Snakho: "cab. Do you want me to dish up for you I cooked your favorite"

Me: "yes please I'm hungry. Mom baked " she squealed

Snakho: "I missed her muffins" she got off the bed wore my t-shirt and stepped out I reached for my jeans took out my phone I went to the bathroom threw the condom in the bin went out put on shorts I called Amelia

Amelia: "I've been waiting"

Me: "sorry baby I just got home"

Amelia: "how was the drive?"

Me: "exhausting, are you in bed already?"

Amelia: "yeah was just waiting for your call I'm gonna sleep now. Starting exams tomorrow"

Me: "you gonna do good I know you will"

Amelia: "I'm sleepy"

Me: "I love you"

Amelia: "I love you too"

Me: "goodnight" she hung up I threw my phone on the bed went out Snakho was taking the food out of the microwave I took a beer from the fridge poured her a glass of wine went to the lounge she came with the food we ate while watching tv "taste good baby thank you" I kissed her cheek

Snakho: "I take care of you"

Me: "and I appreciate you baby" I put my legs on the couch she settled between them

Snakho: "you were different tonight, distracted"

Me: "sorry I guess the drive back took it toll on me"

Snakho: "I hope that's just it" I kissed her head

Me: "it is baby"

Snakho: "I love you Sphelele"

Me: "I love you"

.

#Amelia

*

*

I woke up in the morning took a bath put on my uniform tied my weave into a ponytail I took my bag and phone I had a text from Sphe my heart did flip backs he just wish me a good day telling me he loves me I called him

Sphe: "hey baby"

Me: "got your text thank you"

Sphe: "was thinking of you"

Me: "you at work already"

Sphe: "driving there"

Me: "miss you already"

Sphe: "I'll come Friday I miss you as well I can't wait for next week"

Me: "yeah!" He laughed

Sphe: "dinner Friday night you and me, start coming up with lies to tell your parents now"

Me: "I will I can't wait. I love you Sphe"

Sphe: "I know baby I love you even more"

Me: "I'll call you when I'm back from school"

Sphe: "ace that exam"

Me: "I will bye"

Sphe: "bye" I dropped the call went downstairs I found my brother and sister having breakfast Sihle had left last night

Me: "morning"

Them: "morning" I dished up for myself

Marcel: "ready for the paper?"

Me: "ready as I'll ever be"

Brianna: "wish schools were closed already"

Marcel: "you going to Beverly hills or is Sihle coming here"

Brianna: "I'm going there for two weeks then we coming back for the rest of the holidays"

Me: "missing Sihle already"

Marcel: "fuck off" I laughed

Brianna: "don't swear Marcel"

Me: "yeah Marcel don't swear" he shook his head

Brianna: "Sihle is starting to act weird"

Marcel: "weird how like? how is she acting weird? Is she okay? maybe she's sick" he spoke fast a giggle broke out of me "will you shut up Amelia!"

Me: "geese keep your knickers on"

Brianna: "like she asks weird questions about you Marcel and she's just weird" I raised my eyebrow the driver got in the kitchen we all stood up took our bags went out to the car we dropped off Brianna first then we got dropped off Tracy was waiting for us at the gate more like waiting for Marcel she liked him I don't know what she saw in him

Tracy: "hey" we hugged then she hugged Marcel

Marcel: "see you later" he kissed my cheek and walked off going to his friends

Tracy: "he won't answer my calls or reply to my texts"

Me: "I don't know what's happening in that head of his"

Tracy: "I don't understand why he must treat me this way"

Me: "I'll talk to him"

Tracy: "will you? Please I really like him Amelia I've liked him for ages he knows that"

Me: "I will come let's go get latte" we walked to the cafe.

I was sitting in my room after school reading a novel when the door opened mama got in with a jar of Oreo ice cream

Me: "yum!" She giggled and got on the bed crawled to sit next to me she gave me a spoon

Mama: "what are you reading?"

Me: "barred to you"

Mama: "isn't that a little too sexual for your age"

Me: "I'll stop"

Mama: "let's talk boys Sne tells she saw you making out with some boy"

Me: "I knew she was going to tell you"

Mama: "I'm hurt you didn't tell me you dating I knew you weren't out with Tracy on Saturday but I thought if it was a boy you would tell me Amelia"

Me: "you gonna tell dada and he will freak out mama"

Mama: "what's his name?"

Me: "sphelele khumalo"

Mama: "from?"

Me: "mhlanga but he stays in mpumalanga because of work"

Mama: "he works?! Jesus Amelia how old is he?"

Me: "just 22"

Mama: "his 6 years older than you"

Me: "I love him"

Mama: "couldn't you get someone your age" I couldn't help it I just laughed she smacked me lightly "I was older when I met your father!" We were both laughing "when did you meet him?"

Me: "Friday"

Mama: "and you already talking about love Amelia you moving too fast" I shrugged my shoulders "does he love you?"

Me: "he says he does and I see it"

Mama: "look I can't tell you what to feel but be careful older boys come with drama, don't let him pressure you into doing things you not ready for Amelia you too young for sex I'm not happy you in relationship but I won't tell you to break up with him just don't rush things please I'm too young to be a grandma and your father and I are trying for a baby"

Me: "I thought you were done with Brianna" she giggled

Mama: "I thought so too but we want another one"

Me: "dada is old mama"

Mama: "his not old believe me his not"

Me: "eww gross!!" She laughed she was right though dada didn't look old he looked like a 30 year old

Mama: "don't be smart Amelia"

Me: "you started"

Mama: "I don't want you having sex Amelia but I do know that it might happen please if you feel as if you ready for it know that it comes with consequences I want you to go test with Sphe make sure his clean and get an injection, okay?"

Me: "okay"

Mama: "promise me you will"

Me: "I will mama I promise"

Mama: "I'm trusting you with this Amelia don't let me down please don't disappoint your father and I"

Me: "I won't mama I swear"

Mama: "good" I kissed her cheek and snuggled closer she kissed my head " I can't believe you dating already Amelia you growing up too fast"

Me: "don't start crying" she fanned her face

Mama: "if Brianna starts dating as well I'll just die"

Me: "I'm sorry mama" she ate a spoonful of ice cream

Mama: "come let's gain some weight"

.

Few months later

.

#Sphe

*

*

She walked to me with a smile on her face her hands on her stomach our baby was growing each and every day she looked huge but beautiful.

Insert 3

^

^

#Sphe

*

*

Me: "you look huge" she giggled we hugged

Hope: "I'm pregnant you stupid shit I'm bound to be huge" I kissed her forehead

Me: "how is our baby?"

Hope: "breaking my bones slowly. Take me home my back is killing me" I held her hand and pushed the trolley thAt had her luggage

Me: "you look like you going to pop any minute from now"

Hope: "you know you can't really say that to a pregnant woman"

Me: "you not any woman you my sister I can say whatever I want to say" I opened the door she got in I put her luggage in the boot then got in the car I drove out of the airport

Hope: "I'm starving"

Me: "didn't Shelton feed you before you got on the plane" Shelton was her husband they lived in sandton

Hope: "he did but I'm hungry again"

Me: "whatever you want better be a drive through I'm not going to go wait for food"

Hope: "you so heartless I don't know how your girlfriend copes with you"

Me: "she copes very well thank you"

Hope: "just go to McDonald's get me fold over meal large orange juice not cool drink with mcflurry"

Me: "no wonder you can't even see your feet"

Hope: "I'm due in two weeks you idiot"

Me: "you still fat as fuck" she pinched me hard "what the fuck pancake!!!"

Hope: "call me fat again and you will see"

Me: "nxa I'm not even driving past mcd" she took out her phone and dialed a number putting it on loudspeaker dad's voice came on

Dad: "yes angel"

Hope: "daddy Sphe won't buy me food"

Dad: "is that boy crazy give him the phone"

Me: "she's lying dad I'm turning off at mcd right now"

Dad: "Sphe don't make me kick your ass get her food and bring her home now!" He dropped the call
Hope giggled

Me: "you such an ass"

Hope: "you love me for it" we bought her food then left

Me: "don't make my car dirty please"

Hope: "how is Snakho?"

Me: "she's okay"

Hope: "and why didn't you come home with her?" I haven't brought Snakho home since I got in a relationship with Amelia and that was 8 months back and I've been coming home 3 times a month

Me: "she's busy her work gets hectic"

Hope: "mom says you haven't brought her home in ages and when you home you leave in the morning come back at night, should we be worried Sphe?"

Me: "you and mom need to stay out of my business"

Hope: "who is she?"

Me: "who?"

Hope: "the girl you seeing this side"

Me: "Amelia James"

Hope: "I knew it!! You all the same you Avery and Liam cheaters" I rolled my eyes

Me: "keep talking like that I'm going to make you pay for petrol" she laughed

Hope: "Shelton will buy a garage" I chuckled

Me: "fuck you. Is he okay with you giving birth this side"

Hope: "he doesn't have a choice I need mom this is my first baby and you know dad won't let her come to stay in my house for a month"

Me: "true that"

Hope: "but his coming few days before my due that then he will stay with us for a week"

Me: "that's better"

Hope: "is this girl going to be the reason you move back to Durban"

Me: "no she's going to wit next year"

Hope: "at least she's going to be closer, what will happen to Snakho?"

Me: "I don't know bru Snakho is everything a man would want in a wife just that I'm not in that stage of life and Amelia is just amazing she makes me happy like really happy I need her in my life it like she fills a void I never knew was there I love that girl"

Hope: "if Snakho is not your forever set her free I know what it like to be fooled and played don't do that to her she's a good girl"

Me: "I know"

Hope: "but this girl if she's going to wit next year that means she's a child"

Me: "she's 17"

Hope: "and you ready to commit yourself to someone who is going to be a first year student experiencing freedom for the first time?"

Me: "she's not like that she's not wild"

Hope: "varsity changes people"

Me: "not Amelia she won't be wild I know her she's lady" she chuckled

Hope: "if you say so little brother" I drove the rest of the way in silence thinking about what she had said maybe I was ready to commit myself to her but she wasn't Amelia has been sheltered and overly protected this would be the first time she's living by herself she will get to experience a whole new world she's going to try out new things. I shook my head trying to get rid of the fear that was creeping up I loved her and if she wanted to experience new things she would do that with me even if it meant partying every weekend and going to stupid things like freshers ball and all that shit

Hope: "stop thinking so much Sphe"

Me: "I'm not" I opened the gate and drove up I parked outside the garage I was still going to see Amelia I went to open her door helped her out "go in I'll bring the bags"

Hope: "okay" I called Amelia

Amelia: "hi baby"

Me: "hey I'm coming to see you"

Amelia: "it late Sphe we about to have dinner I can't come out now I thought we had plans for tomorrow"

Me: "I want to see you now"

Amelia: "you know how it us here please don't demand" I sighed rubbing my forehead "please I'll see you tomorrow dada will kill me"

Me: "sneak out"

Amelia: "I can't you I can't"

Me: "Amelia I want to see you I'm on my way"

Amelia: "can you at least come after dinner"

Me: "text me when it done" she huffed

Amelia: "okay"

Me: "I love you baby"

Amelia: "I love you" I hung up went in I took hope's bags to her room then went downstairs found everyone in the lounge watching tv

Me: "I'm gonna go for awhile I'll be back"

Mom: "where you going to this late?"

Me: "meet up with some friends"

Dad: "you not going to wait for dinner?"

Me: "I'll eat where I'm going"

Dad: "be safe" I nodded and left I drove past chicken lickin bought some wings and cool drink then drove to her home I parked a house away I called her she didn't answer I sent her a text saying I'm here I played music softly laid back on the chair. I heard a soft knock on the window I sat up and opened the door she got in

Amelia: "you fell asleep, I'm sorry I took long" I held her face kissed her hard she kissed me just as hard I could taste her mouth wash she pressed her body on mine I picked her up she sat on me her ass pressed the hooter we pulled apart laughing I pushed back the chair

Me: "I missed you" I pushed back her weaves

Amelia: "I also missed you baby I'm glad you came this weekend"

Me: "can't stay away"

Amelia: "how was your week?"

Me: "good, how was the trip to wit?"

Amelia: "good we just having accommodation arguments with Marcel going to Uct dada doesn't want me to stay alone so they want me to stay with uncle Siya"

Me: "we can't have that" she shook her head

Amelia: "no we can't but I also don't want to push it babe it took lot of convincing to let dada agree to me going to wit he wanted me around here"

Me: "you right" she kissed my neck "baby you going to make me hard" I think this is why I haven't let go of Snakho it was the sex Amelia and I hadn't gotten there yet and as much as I fantasized about Amelia while having sex with Snakho I still needed the sex

Amelia: "I love your neck" I chuckled

Me: "do you now?"

Amelia: "yeah" she came up with her kisses on my jawline until she softly bit my ear I shivered "baby"

Me: "mmh"

Amelia: "you smell so good" I put my hands under her pj shorts grabbed her ass bringing her closer

Me: "it's all for you baby"

.

#Amelia

*

*

I woke up when I felt someone shake me I opened my eyes it took a moment for me to realize the sun was out I moved back fast

Me: "you said you will wake me up before the sun is out"

Sphe: "I know I'm sorry I couldn't wake up"

Me: "I have to go"

Sphe: "kiss me first" we kissed shortly "I'll see you after 12:00"

Me: "I'm gonna sleep for awhile" we kissed "I love you"

Sphe: "love you" I got out the car ran home the security opened the gate shaking his head

Me: "the fuck" I ran up the driveway went in through the kitchen found Thembeke making breakfast "morning"

Thembeke: "you almost got caught" we laughed

Me: "I'm going to bed" I grabbed a fruit from the fridge went up to my room met up with Brianna coming out of her room little Sis was in high school now she was looking more like mama with every passing day even her boobs were coming out and her ass was getting bigger it worried dada

Brianna: "morning"

Me: "morning kid"

Brianna: "why you up so early?"

Me: "why you up early?"

Brianna: "I need to talk to mama I'm bleeding" I laughed this was really going to drive dada crazy

Me: "you got your first period"

Brianna: "I think so"

Me: "okay" I went to my room got under the covers and drifted off to sleep.

My phone ringing woke me up I reached for it

Me: "hello"

Sphe: "wake up" I giggled sitting up "go bath baby and get ready"

Me: "okay"

Sphe: "I'll meet you at circus circus"

Me: "okay baby" I dropped the call got out the bed made it then opened the windows I saw dada walking around the fish pond feeding them Asanda my little cousin following him, he was uncle Siya's last born he was visiting. I went to shower got out lotioned got dressed in my short ripped denim tight dress with thigh denim boots I had a short curly peruvian on I grabbed my bag after putting on my dark purple lipstick went downstairs found grandma mama and Brianna watching tv in the lounge Brianna had her head on mama's lap she was brushing her hair

Me: "I'm going"

Mama: "are those my boots Amelia because I don't remember buying you them"

Me: "nah not really"

Mama: "don't lie"

Me: "you haven't worn them for so long so technically they not yours" grandma laughed

Mama: "child take off my boots wear your own shoes"

Me: "mama please it going to ruin my outfit"

Mama: "just today I want them back in my closet" I kissed her cheek

Me: "thank you let me run before dada comes back in"

Grandma: "because you know you shouldn't be wearing something that short" I ran out went to the cottage asked the driver to drive me. He dropped me off at gateway I went to circus circus I found Sphe with some lady she was also colored he stood up when he saw me my heart was pounding she also stood up she was beautiful and pregnant

Sphe: "you look beautiful my love" he gave me a soft peck "this is my sister Hope" she had beautiful twinkling green eyes

Hope: "lovely to meet you Amelia you as beautiful as he said" we hugged

Me: "so are you"

Hope: "oh child I'm fat as hell your man been telling me"

Me: "his an idiot sometimes"

Sphe: "hey" we sat down "sorry baby she forced me to bring her with me"

Me: "it's okay"

Hope: "I wanted to meet this girl who has my little brother sleeping out"

Sphe: "less on the little part please, fruit cocktail babe?"

Me: "yes please" he waved over a waitress

Hope: "I wanna order I'm starving" she paged through the menu Sphe opened my thighs I looked at me he smiled sweetly and put his hand up until it touched my nana my eyes widened

Hope: "stop touching her Sphe her face is as red as the bottoms of her boots" my face only got hotter

Sphe: "you embarrassing my girl"

Hope: "stop touching her under the table" I removed his hand

Sphe: "you gonna have your food as a take away" she giggled her phone rang a huge smile plastered on her face

Hope: "Mr Carter" Sphe held my chin making me look at him

Sphe: "it her husband she will take awhile"

Me: "missed you in these few hours" he smiled and gave me a soft peck

Sphe: "I'm thinking we get the food as a take away we can go home spend the day there"

Me: "your parents?"

Sphe: "gone to my grandparents house they will be back tomorrow"

Me: "okay" he kissed me we placed our orders

Sphe: "you gonna sleep over right"

Me: "I see you really don't want me to go to Wit" he chuckled and pushed few strands of my weave behind my ear

Sphe: "you have a friend get her to cover for you"

Me: "I've never slept over at her house and if I say I'm there dada decides to check and my tracker shows that I'm at mhlanga he is going to show up at your house"

Sphe: "talk to your mom please"

Me: "Sphe let's not push things January is already the corner I'll have my own place we will spend so much time together"

Sphe: "okay" we kissed our food came Hope was still on the phone with her husband "Hope let's go"

Hope: "help me up" I stood up while he did we walked out she was walking behind us we held each other hand

Sphe: "can't wait to see you naked" he whispered in my ear and bit it

Me: "Sphe I'm not.." he shut me up with a kiss

Sphe: "we will talk home" I started feeling anxious I really wasn't ready for that step and we needed to get tested first and I needed an injection the ride to his home I was just lost in my thoughts. He opened the door I got out he opened Hope's as well

Hope: "I'll dish this up"

Sphe: "thank you" we all went in she went the other way while we went upstairs he opened the door "get in baby" I got in his room was beautiful all gray with a touch of white and a tv on the wall with a couch by the window

Me: "it beautiful"

Sphe: "thank you" he walked over to the closet got a t-shirt "make yourself comfortable I'll go get our food"

Me: "okay" he walked out I changed into his t-shirt it stood mid thigh I sat on the couch crossed my legs I was stressed out sex was definitely something I didn't want to do. He came back

Sphe: "come to bed" he put the plates on the bedside and walked to he took his t-shirt off I swallowed spit he kicked off his sneakers even his feet were perfect he had full blown 8 packs with an amazing V that had little hair going down pointing to his penis "stop staring I might just take you right here on the couch" he lifted me I squealed in surprise he put me down on the bed and got on top of me I breathed heavily

Me: "Sphe"

Sphe: "yes baby" I was squirming under him as he kissed my neck biting it while he ran his fingers all over my body

Me: "I'm not ready Sphe" he moved back and sat on his legs he looked hella sexy with his eyes half closed and red

Sphe: "why" his voice was husky

Me: "I'm just not and we gonna need to get a tested first well you will because I'm clean and I'll have to be on an injection and I'm just not ready not even emotionally like I.." he shut me up with a kiss pushing his tongue in my mouth I gasped and pushed my body to his he put his hand under the t-shirt and squeezed my boob I couldn't help the moan that came out of my mouth his body shook he moved back and took off the t-shirt he stared at me while biting his bottom lip

Sphe: "fuck you better than I had imagined" he kissed my belly ring my parents had no idea I had it I got it done with Tracy on her birthday "you so sexy"

Me: "Sphe we can't have sex"

Sphe: "we won't" he flipped my body making me lay on my stomach I thanked God I was wearing good underwear he lifted my ass giving it a squeeze "I'm obsessed with your ass baby" he spanked me a louder moan escaped my mouth "baby the things your moan do to me"

Me: "Sphe please"

Sphe: "what you need baby"

Me: "touch me"

Sphe: "with pleasure" he spread my legs my body shivered as he ran his fingertips on my inner thigh followed by bites he bit my butt cheeks hard I cried out "fuck baby you got me all twisted" I called out his name he put his hand on my nana and lifted my body upper he ripped off my thong instead of being alarmed I got wetter he swept his tongue through my nana I cried out and held the headboard I lost my mind as his mouth started attacking my nana sucking in my clit and his tongue penetrating me I came hard my body shook violently he kept going until I calmed down he held my waist making me lay on my back he got better my legs "please tell me no one has ever seen you orgasm" I nodded "fuck yeah" we kissed "baby that was magical watching you come apart with my tongue in your tight pussy and my thumb in your clit sitting on my face fuck Amelia baby it doesn't get better than that" we kissed again

Me: "I love you"

Sphe: "and I love you baby I love you so much" he gave me a soft peck "come sit up and eat" he got off the bed went to the bathroom and came back he opened the tv rented a movie we started eating while watching the movie

Me: "will you do that again?"

Sphe: "do what baby?"

Me: "go down on me like that" he bit my neck sucking on it hard and quickly

Sphe: "whenever you want me to" I smiled and kissed his cheek

Me: "I loved it" he chuckled

Sphe: "I noticed" I threw a cucumber at him he caught it with his mouth and chewed it while grinning

Me: "stupid"

Sphe: "wanna see my pictures as a baby"

Me: "yes please!" He jumped off the bed went to the closet came back with a scrapbook

Sphe: "mom made these for all of us it was last year's Christmas present" I put my food aside he opened his legs and pulled me to sit between them we looked at it together with him telling me about the times the pictures taken and naming his siblings

Me: "how is it that you and Hope are colored"

Sphe: "well mom isn't my biological mother, dad went to Cuba for a few years for some medical trial that's where he met my mother who was Spanish they had me when he came back my mother gave him all parental rights so mom raised me as her own from the time I was one and Hope is not my dad's her father is British met mom in London they broke up mom came back to SA got back together with dad they had Liam, Hope's father followed her kidnapped her and raped her Hope was a result all Hope knew was dad up until she was grown they told her, Thando is dad's she has her own mother but mom raised her as well she had a twin Lwethu who passed away her mother knocked her with a car after that

Thando came to stay with us dad had Thando when mom had went back home to Nigeria they lost touch mom found out she was pregnant with Avery and dad didn't know up until years later. So it Avery, Thando, Liam, Hope and me then there's Nosipho who is actually my aunt but mom raised her as well from the time she was 5"

Me: "wow your mom is something else"

Sphe: "she's my dad's hope dad crumbles without her there was a time where they divorced mom dated some guy dad couldn't handle it he moved to LA only came back when mom took him back" he kissed my cheek "I want the kind of love they had or maybe even greater"

Me: "it sounds like they've been through a lot but they survived"

Sphe: "dad always says when you find someone who will hold your hand through e everything and anything done let go of that person"

Me: "wow"

Sphe: "can you promise me that? Promise me to hold my hand through everything and anything"

Me: "I promise" he held my face making me look at him we kissed shortly

Sphe: "I love you" I turned the page

Me: "another colored?" He chuckled

Sphe: "yes my nephew Nathan, Avery's son not from his wife"

Me: "his adorable"

Sphe: "his the baby of the family his more like my mom's son than grandson" I put the scrapbook aside and turned getting on top of him I put my arm around his neck and my hand in his hair

Me: "your family sounds amazing"

Sphe: "I've never really told any girl about my family I just brushed them off when they asked about how we mixed" I felt my heart warming up

Me: "that means a lot to me" I kissed him

.

#Marcel

*

*

Me: "I'll be fine mama" I held her as she cried she didn't cry like this when we took Amelia to her place it was February school was starting tomorrow we were finally out of home out of high school

Dada: "zamagcina let the boy breath"

Mama: "no Brian, no!"

Dada: "you the one who let them go to varieties away from home you said they need to learn responsibility and independence so here we are" she moved from my chest pointed her finger at dada

Mama: "I will kill you Brian" he put his hands up "now hold me" Dada chuckled and brought her to him wrapping his arms around her body

Brianna: "can we go already"

Me: "what you rushing for?" She rolled her eyes Sihle giggled I winked at her she looked down quickly

Brianna: "Dada let's go"

Dada: "okay princess" I gave mama a soft peck kissed Brianna on his cheek then went to Sihle I kissed her cheek

Me: "I miss you already" I whispered before going to dada he kissed my head I hugged mama one last time

Mama: "I love you Marcel don't forget that"

Me: "I love you mama. I'll come home soon"

Mama: "don't drive it's too far" I got my car after I got my license Amelia was upset about it she threw a tantrum but she wasn't 18 yet she couldn't get her license so no car for her while I had my Audi TT Coupe a driver was going to arrive tonight bringing it since we flew in the jet

Me: "I won't" I walked them out when the car drove out I took a lift up to my floor I got in my flat sat on the couch and just breathed out someone knocked I went to open the door Sihle was standing there with a smile on her face

Sihle: "told dada I forgot my phone"

Me: "come here you naughty child" I pulled her in she giggled I covered my lips with her we kissed deeply she pulled back too quickly "ha.a Nosihle"

Sihle: "they will notice. I love you"

Me: "love you more" I gave her soft peck "come I'll take you downstairs"

Sihle: "give us a chance to make out in the elevator" I laughed shaking my head

Me: "yes baby" I kissed her

Insert 4

^

^

#Amelia

*

*

I looked at him sleeping he was snoring softly he looked too good for words. Last night had been the first night we spent together in bed after he made me come with his tongue on my clit and his thumb in my ass we cuddled naked and fell asleep. This was the best part about being away from home was waking up next to my man and falling asleep next to him. My phone rang I quickly silenced it before it woke him up

Me: "hey" I answered walking out the room

Mama: "hey baby you good"

Me: "yeah and you"

Mama: "I'm good just checking on you"

Me: "thank you"

Mama: "is Sphe there?"

Me: "uhm" she chuckled

Mama: "I was in varsity once just be careful and remember every action has a consequence and freedom comes with responsibility"

Me: "I know mama and yes his here"

Mama: "lost your virginity yet"

Me: "no"

Mama: "don't do it unless you ready"

Me: "I know mama"

Mama: "good I love you enjoy your day"

Me: "I love you too"

Mama: "actually called to ask where is my Dior navy hand bag along with that Ralph Lauren chino pants the navy ones I'm going on a conference with your father " I giggled

Me: "here in my closet"

Mama: "Amelia!!"

Me: " I'll take care of them"

Mama: "stupid child" she ended the call I went back in the room Sphe was out the bed he was stretching it was a beautiful sight his muscles expanding and bending, his eyes settled on me he smiled

Sphe: "good morning sexy"

Me: "good morning yourself sexy"

Sphe: "come to your man" I walked to him smiling he grabbed my ass and lifted me up I wrapped my legs around his waist "so I was thinking we find a doctor this side" I knew what this meant

Me: "okay" we were few months away from our 2nd year anniversary

Sphe: "good, I'll call Hope she will know a good gp and gyna for your injection"

Me: "okay" he shook his head

Sphe: "I'm not forcing you Amelia and I'm not saying we going to do it now we can still wait"

Me: "okay thank you"

Sphe: "kiss me"

Me: "you got morning breath" he chuckled

Sphe: "you fucking with me right" I shook my head he kissed me hard penetrating my mouth with his tongue at first I tried pushing him back but I ended up kissing him back with just as much desire he pressed me on the wall and flexed his hip I moaned in his mouth as usual his body shivered as it always does when I moaned he said my moans made him lose control of his body he flexed it again my moan got louder he held onto me and pulled back "you see why I want us to see the doctor today baby when you think about it you feel as if you not ready but you want this as much as I do I know you Amelia I know how your body works we've been together for 19 months I know you"

Me: "yes" he gave me a soft peck

Sphe: "let's go have breakfast"

Me: "okay put me down" he did we walked downstairs my apartment was 2 bedroom, open plan kitchen and dinning area with a bar, lounge, roof pool and jacuzzi it was in sandhurst

Sphe: "you want cereal or English breakfast?"

Me: "I'll have grapefruit and a glass of water I'm not hungry"

Sphe: "that's not food maybe you can snack on that, I'm making you proper breakfast" he opened the fridge mama had done my grocery before they left for cape town

Me: "you look so good" he was just in his boyleg with an apron on top

Sphe: "I know love I know" he winked making me giggle

Me: "I don't like eggs"

Sphe: "you need the protein"

Me: "so you gonna force me to eat eggs"

Sphe: "yes my love yes" I got off the chair went to the lounge opened trace I went back to the kitchen singing Rihanna - Needed me

Me: "i was good on my own, that's the way it was that's the way it was you was good on the low for a faded fuck On some faded love Shit, what the fuck you complaining for?"

Feeling jaded huh?

Used to trip off that shit I was kickin' to you

Had some fun on the run though I give it to you but baby don't get it twisted you was just another nigga on the hit list tryna fix your inner issues with a bad bitch didn't they tell you that I was a savage fuck your white horse and a carriage Bet you never could imagine never told you you could have it you needed me Ooh You needed me to feel a little more, and give a little less know you hate to confess but baby ooh, you needed me

You been rollin' around, shit I'm rollin up" he pulled me to him my body crashed against his he turned me around pressing my ass on his penis with his hands on my waist he moved me in circles we danced until the song ended he turned me around and took my hand making me touch his hard penis I held it I was used to it now it didn't freak me out we've had oral sex lot of times and he liked it when I gave him a hand job

Sphe: "your moves"

Me: "everything I do makes you hard"

Sphe: "you should be happy" I squeezed it he shut his eyes groaning

Me: "finish up with that breakfast babe" I let go of him laughing

Sphe: "the day Amelia that's all I'm saying"

Me: "that's all you've been saying for months now my love" he chuckled

Sphe: "believe me you won't walk for a week" he grabbed his junk Sphe was huge like really huge the first time I gave him a blow job the corner of lips were cut

Me: "whatever"

Sphe: "you gonna worship me and be obsessed with me once I get Mntungwa in your little pussy" I covered my face with my hands laughing

Me: "will you stop gosh" he chuckled and went on with making breakfast.

Few hours later we were dressed I was wearing a short loose white dress and caramel sandals while he was in brown chino shorts and a white t-shirt with white Stan Smith we were going to the doctor we both did the tests came back negative Sphe tested regularly I got my injection then we left for the mall had lunch I caught him staring at me I smiled and put my fork down

Me: "what's wrong?"

Sphe: "I love you"

Me: "so you say"

Sphe: "you such an idiot"

Me: "call me an idiot again I might just not pull you into my mouth tonight" he smiled shaking his head

Sphe: "we going to see Hermione after this" I nodded he was so in love with Hope's 7 months old daughter given she was the cutest baby ever with silk brown hair and green big eyes and dimples on her chubby cheeks

Me: "should I buy like a gift or something?"

Sphe: "that child has more things than she needs and want"

Me: "we will go pass earth child I don't think I should see her for the first time empty handed" he shrugged his shoulders

Sphe: "if you want to be a woman about it then alright"

Me: "you do realize what you just said right?" He smiled

Sphe: "yeah sorry" I just shook my head cutting the t bone I was having for lunch "you look so cute sitting over there cutting that steak popping it in your mouth" I couldn't help the giggle that came out of my mouth I took the napkin to cover my mouth

Me: "you too stupid for words" We finished lunch he paid we went to buy Hermione something then he drove to Hope's house he pressed the pass code and drove in parking outside the garage "beautiful home"

Sphe: "don't look even close to perfection as your home" yeah home looked like something that stepped out of an architectural magazine it wasn't like that when they bought it though dada kept making changes

Me: "it still beautiful" he got out and came to open my door I got out his eyes went all over my body

Sphe: "you beautiful" I just smiled he does this randomly and every time he does something happens in my heart

Me: "Sphe" he gave me a soft peck and held my hand we walked over around the house got in the back "can't you use the front door"

Sphe: "knowing them there's no one downstairs and the maid is in the cottage" we went through the kitchen pass the dinning area to the lounge "langelihle!!!!"

Me: "damn baby warn me next time you going to scream" he chuckled Hope came running to the lounge she jumped on Sphe he held her as she wrapped he legs around his waist kissing his cheek repeatedly

Sphe: "missed me?"

Hope: "heck yeah" she looked at me smiling then got off him we hugged

Me: "hi"

Hope: "hello"

Me: "you look good you've lost all the weight"

Hope: "I didn't even need gym mom's genes took care of me"

Sphe: "where's my princess?"

Hope: "her room, come up" we followed her up Hermione was laying on her rocky bed Sphe lifted her up and planted a big kiss on her mouth she threw up all over his face I laughed out loudly while Hope took her Sphe had his mouth open he wasn't moving I took a towel wiped his face he spat out some of the vomit that got in his mouth

Hope: "the bathroom is that way" she was also laughing "I'm sorry should have told you not to shake her she just ate"

Sphe: "wow thanks for the warning" he walked to the bathroom

Me: "good girl Hermione" we laughed even she giggled

Hope: "don't be mean to my brother"

Me: "can I hold her" she nodded giving her to me "she's heavy"

Hope: "I know right I don't leave the house without a stroller. How are things with you and Sphe?"

Me: "good we good happy"

Hope: "well I'm just glad you live here I'll get to see him a lot" Sphe came out

Sphe: "now I smell like a baby" he pulled Hermione's cheek she giggled sweetly

Hope: "you should have your own now" Sphe chuckled

Sphe: "not ready I love my nieces and nephews but that's where it ends"

Hope: "you coming to dinner at Avery's house?"

Sphe: "yeah, actually we have to get going need to love my girl before we go there" I looked down feeling my face heating up

Hope: "you mean you need to have sex"

Sphe: "oh no we abstaining" hope looked at me then they laughed while I was pissed

Me: "excuse me" I walked out Sphe caught me on the stairs

Sphe: "Hope thinks you angry"

Me: "do you have to tell the whole world that we not having sex?!" He raised his eyebrow

Sphe: "firstly you will not raise your voice at me I'm not your little brother, secondly it my sister not the whole world and thirdly I'm proud that you a virgin if you embarrassed about that tough" he walked back to the nursery I stood there not knowing what to do with myself until this white man came up he smiled he looked beautiful

Him: "you must be Amelia sphe's person I've heard a lot I'm about you, I'm Shelton Hope's other half" we hugged

Me: "nice meeting you"

Shelton: "why you standing here looking lost"

Me: "it's nothing"

Shelton: "come" we walked to the nursery Hope jumped on him he held her tightly laughing

Shelton: "missed you" they kissed hard and for a very long time Sphe was busy with Hermione I was just standing awkwardly looking at him after awhile I went to sit next to him he kissed my cheek

Me: "I'm sorry"

Sphe: "I love you"

Me: "I love you more"

.

#Sphe

*

*

I watched her laying on the carpet with Hermione on her stomach sleeping Amelia made want things I knew I wasn't ready for but I wanted them all with her marriage and children she just made me look at the world differently. I knew I had to dump Snakho I just didn't know how to she's been amazing and loving mom would be hurt if she found out I had been cheating on Snakho for almost two years. We stared at each other smiling

Me: "we should go"

Amelia: "put her in her crib" I stood up took Hermione I put her in her crib then helped Amelia stand up I took the monitor with me we went downstairs found the couple cuddling on the sofa I gave hope the monitor

Me: "we leaving"

Hope: "okay we'll see you at dinner" i kissed her cheek

Me: "take care of my girls Shelton"

Shelton: "as always" Shelton was the best to happen to Hope after a messy break up with her previous boyfriend the guy worshipped her I think that's why dad was okay with her getting married at a young age.

I watched Amelia looking at herself on the large mirror that was in her room she was wearing a blue body hugging dress below her knees with a lace back and white heels

Amelia: "you sure this is good" I nodded "Sphe please I'm meeting the rest of your siblings make things easy for me"

Me: "baby you look beautiful and you don't have to dress up for these idiots" she rolled her eyes

Amelia: "let's go"

Me: "finally Pretoria is a long drive"

Amelia: "we should have car pooled with Hope"

Me: "nah" besides I was taking her back to my house tonight she just didn't know it yet. Once she had her seatbelt buckled I drove off she was singing along to Ariana Grande - into you, moving along touching her body my girl liked dancing I made a mental note to take her dancing soon my friends liked clubbing this side clubs in Mp were not as nice as Jhb but the thought of those horny niggas looking at her body left me with an unsettling feeling buy I also knew it only a matter of time before she finds friends she will go clubbing with. We got to Avery's house within 30 minutes I parked on the driveway Nosi and Thando were already here they cars were parked outside the garage

Amelia: "nice car" she was looking at Thando's mini cooper s

Me: "it girly"

Amelia: "exactly" I took her hand opened the door I could hear laughter from the lounge we walked there

Me: "fam!"

Them: "hey!" We all shared hugs

Me: "where is Liam?"

Avery: "he should be on his way" Liam and Nosi also stayed in Mp Thando stayed in midrand

Nosi: "he wanted to drive on his own" Avery and I laughed that meant he wasn't going back to Mp tonight Liam liked girls and they loved him plus he loved the night life and all things expensive and flashy

Me: "this is Amelia baby these are my siblings you've already seen their pictures and that's Olwam the only Mrs Khumalo for now besides mom of course"

Amelia: "hello" they greeted back Avery patted my shoulder I knew that meant he approves

Avery: "you very beautiful Amelia"

Amelia: "thank you"

Sphe: "where's Bulelani and Yamke"

Olwam: "bulelani is in his room and Yamke is with her nanny in the kitchen feeding her" I went to the kitchen she bounced on her chair as soon as she saw me lifting her arms

Yamke: "daddy Sphe!!! Take me take me" I picked her up threw on the air she laughed loudly I did it again her voice went louder then I put her on the counter "again daddy Sphe again!"

Me: "how are you princess?"

Yamke: "I'm okay do it again"

I laughed shaking my head

Me: "finish dinner first"

Yamke: "you gonna play my leggo with me when I'm done"

Me: "yes" she clapped excitedly

Yamke: "yeah!!"

Me: "come kiss daddy" she pouted I gave her a soft peck "finish your food" I went back to the lounge sat next to my girl who was listening to Thando as she spoke about her boyfriend Preston he was Nosi's nephew I don't understand what my sister's saw in white guys. Liam walked in with some tall skinny yellow bone clinging to his arm

Liam: "Nzuzo's sperms !!!" I laughed Dad always said Liam was supposed to be dad Reign's son not his he walked around giving us hugs "and who is this beauty"

Me: "my girl watch yourself"

Liam: "no wonder you want to leave Snakho" I stood up in anger ready to put my fist on his face he was older but I was fucking stronger and he knew that Avery was between us in a second Amelia pulled my arm but I didn't look at her I continued staring at this fucker who was already tipsy

Avery: "sit down Sphe, Liam back off go greet your daughter in the kitchen"

Liam: "my princess is still up" he walked out

Avery: "Sphelele"

Me: "yeah whatever" I sat down I avoided looking at Amelia I didn't even know how to get myself out of this mess but when she put her hand on mine giving it a squeeze I looked at her she smiled weakly I pushed back her weave and kissed her forehead I could feel my hands shaking "I love you only you"

Amelia: "we will talk later when we alone"

Me: "I love you" I needed her to say it back I needed to hear it Hope got in with her own screams and Shelton following behind her she looked at them

Olwam: "we can eat now" they all stood up following her to the dining area I followed behind with my hands in my pocket and my head down we had dinner my head wasn't even there anymore the laughter and conversations around the table sounded far

Nosi: "relax she looks like she's over it" she whispered in my ear I shook my head

Me: "she's not" Amelia was laughing and engaging in the convos but I knew her she just didnt like arguing in front of people and if she was angry at me she didn't show other people. We finished dinner went to have drinks I didn't want to be there anymore after about 30 minutes I stood up

Me: "we leaving"

Nosi: "I'm sleeping over can't drive now" she was also quarter to drunk

Avery: "as if I was going to let you drive in your state" we laughed

Amelia: "it was nice meeting you all"

Them: "same here"

Thando: "I'll get your number from Sphe we should all go shopping and catch lunch next week"

Hope: "yeah totally"

Amelia: "I look forward to it" we walked out after closing her door Liam ran out

Liam: "a minute" I walked to him "I messed up I didn't realize and I'm sorry I hope she's not angry"

Me: "it fine bro it was stupid of you but it fine" we hugged

Liam: "I'll see you during the week"

Me: "you not going back to your place" he chuckled

Liam: "how can I leave this beautiful province on a weekend? Let's go to taboo"

Me: "we going back to my place"

Liam: "alright" I got in the car and drove off after 20 minutes of silence she had fallen asleep I got to my house close to an hour later I parked in the garage closing it behind me I got out went to her side she stirred and woke up when I undid the seatbelt I moved back so she can get out

Amelia: "where are we?"

Me: "my house"

Amelia: "Sphe you can't do that, you can't just bring me here without talking to me. What if dad decides to check and he sees I'm not even in the province?"

Me: "we will see when that happens" I took her hand started walking

Amelia: "my bag" she walked to the car got her bag we went in through the kitchen

Me: "welcome home" I tried kissing her but she moved back

Amelia: "I'm tired I want to sleep"

Me: "can we talk about what happened?"

Amelia: "how long have you been cheating on me?"

Me: "so you just going to jump to conclusions"

Amelia: "yes I'm gonna take a long jump"

Me: "I'm not cheating on you" technically I wasn't I was cheating on Snakho

Amelia: "I'm not gonna listen to your lies can you show me the bedroom and borrow me a t-shirt"

Me: "let me explain and I'm not lying to you"

Amelia: "I want to sleep"

Me: "whatever" I walked to my room I'm not the begging type my pride would never let me "are you going to stand there all night" she followed me I gave her my pj top and showed her the bathroom I sat on the bed watched her changing after that she went to the bathroom I took off my clothes wore my pj bottom got on top of the bed she came back

Amelia: "can you move I want to sleep"

Me: "sleep I'm not holding you"

Amelia: "you on top of the cover Sphe will you fucking move!" I sat up slowly shaking my head there's nothing I hate more than disrespect

Me: "you not going to speak to me like that Amelia I asked you to let me explain and you didn't want me to" I moved back removing the cover from under me she got under it and slept looking away from me. After an hour of tossing and turning I went to the lounge laid on the couch then opened soccer. During half time I went to chicken lickin got some wings went back to my house got couple of beers went back to my match.

.

#Amelia

*

*

I woke up in bed alone I sat up and just thought about last night I knew that Sphe had been cheating on me but I didn't want to believe it. You know when you know something is true you can even feel it but you just like nah it's the universe trying to fuck with me? That's exactly how I was feeling. I also knew that chances are this Snakho chick was with him before me which meant all these months he had been fooling me. I wanted to be angry and hurt me but all I needed was to snuggle close to him and let him hold me I wanted to be weak and loved and cared for in his arms. I got off the bed went to the bathroom I brushed my teeth using his toothbrush then went out I found him in the lounge sleeping with beer bottles on the floor and an empty take away from chicken lickin he loved his hot wings.

Me: "Sphe" I shook him lightly "Sphe wake up its morning" I shook him harder he opened his eyes and smiled "wake up" I went to open the curtains then opened the sliding door letting fresh air in "you slept on the couch?"

Sphe: "you were mad at me I couldn't sleep" and that's because you an cheating ass I picked up the bottles threw them in the bin in the kitchen "Amelia" he held me from behind and kissed my neck "I'm sorry"

Me: "how long?"

Sphe: "she was before you just that I haven't broken up with her but I haven't loved her since I fell in love with you, she's not you I could never love her"

Me: "you lied you've been lying"

Sphe: "no I've never lied you I just didn't tell you and you never asked"

Me: "as If that makes it okay"

Sphe: "I'm sorry" he kissed my neck I tilted my head he smiled and went on to kiss another spot biting it softly "tell me you forgive"

Me: "no Sphe you've been lying to me from the time we met" he turned me to face him

Sphe: "a.a Amelia do not do that I've never lied to you I wouldn't do that" he cupped my face "Baby I could never lie to you I swear you my lifeline trust me" he gave me a soft peck " do you not know how much I love you and value you" he now had his hands ruining up and down my inner thighs his thumb brushing my nana every time his hand went up

Me: "Sphe" I could feel myself getting weak. his erection was poking my stomach getting harder with every passing second

Sphe: "Amelia. Trust me it's you it been you since I saw you wearing that skin tight denim skirt and vest" he kissed my jawline coming up "I love you" he looked at me "you haven't told me you love me since before dinner"

Me: "I love you" he smashed his lips on mine we kissed hard and deeply he grabbed my ass lifting me up he put me on the counter and got between my legs his hands went under the pj top finding my breasts he started massaging them and pinching my nipples until they were hard and achey "Sphe" I had my head thrown back giving him access as he was licking and sucking on my neck he took the top I was wearing and pulled my breast into his mouth I moaned louder he groaned he realised it and went on the other one I had his hair in my hand he moved from my breasts went down leaving bites and kisses all over my he played with my belly ring a little making me giggle but my giggle turned into a moan when his tongue flicked on my clit he kept going his tongue doing unspeakable things to my nana things that would make my father's heart stop beating just as I was about to come he stopped I felt like swearing at him hard but I also knew he wouldn't like that

Sphe: "Amelia"

Me: "mmh"

Sphe: "I want to fill your orgasm around my dick"

Me: "but the doctor said wait two weeks"

Sphe: "I have condoms please"

Me: "okay" he lifted me off the counter I wrapped legs around his waist we kissed walking back to his room someone called his name in a whisper I pulled back and looked at the door some girl was standing there with tears running down her face he turned so he could see her

Sphe: "Snakho" his voice was breaking

Insert 5

^

^

#Sphe

*

*

I put Amelia down as millions thoughts came running into my mind I pulled Amelia to stand behind me Snakho was insecure enough about her body she didn't need to see Amelia's body that would be a final nail into the coffin

Amelia: "I need the top Sphe"

Me: "go take a t-shirt from my closet and please wait for me in the bedroom" I needed her to be away from whatever was about to go down because Snakho would beat her up if she wanted to

Amelia: "but Sphe"

Me: "please"

Amelia: "okay" she looked at Snakho before going to my room I walked closer to her

Snakho: "how long have you been fucking her?"

Me: "I thought you were in nelspruit, when did you come back? Why didn't you tell me you back?"

Snakho: "how long have you been fucking that whore" now here is a thing if your girl calls a certain girl a whore then she's a whore no arguments but this was Amelia we were talking about not some random girl I was fucking

Me: "you came back early to check on me? You see what you not trusting me is doing to us?" Snakho: "don't do that Sphe don't try to handle me"

Me: "I wanna know why you here Snakho because according to my knowledge I was supposed to pick you up tonight" she looked down

Snakho: "you cheating on me"

Me: "and you not answering my questions"

Snakho: "I had a bad feeling. Can you tell her to leave so we can talk"

Me: "she can't leave she needs me to take her back to jhb"

Snakho: "she can catch a taxi"

Me: "Snakho jhb is far" and she's never taken a taxi in her life

Snakho: "she's beautiful"

Me: "so are you" she sighed

Snakho: "you hurt me Sphe, what was I not doing right?"

Me: "I'm sorry this had nothing to do with you"

Snakho: "is she just some girl you picked up at the club because I think I can deal with that" I looked around the house before looking down she let out a sob I walked over to her "don't touch me please"

Me: "Snakho let me make this right"

Snakho: "how long Sphe? How?!!!"

Me: "I'm sorry"

Snakho: "tell me"

Me: "year and a half" she started wailing while shaking her head I looked at her not knowing what to do

Snakho: "all this time I was thinking we fine"

Me: "it my fault I'm sorry" she walked over to the kitchen I followed her my eyes went wide as she took out a bottle of brandy "thought you didn't drink"

Snakho: "thought I was in a relationship with someone faithful"

Me: "stop"

Snakho: "go tell her to leave now" I raised my eyebrows "oh I can throw her out" it took a minute for me to register what was happening by the time I got to my room Amelia was screaming I pulled Snakho off her

Me: "she's a fucking kid! Are you crazy?!!!"

Snakho: "she wasn't a kid when she was fucking you" I walked to her feeling my skin heat up from anger she backed up until her back hit the wall "you not going to hit me because of this whore"

Me: "you need a time out" she flooded her arms across her chest I brought my eyebrows together "not the time to be stubborn Snakho believe me" she shoved me off and walked out I walked to Amelia and touched her bruised cheek

Amelia: "she slapped me" I wiped her tears

Me: "I'm sorry baby"

Amelia: "take me back to my place please"

Me: "baby"

Amelia: "please" I pulled her to my chest wrapped my arms around her body "I just wanna go Sphe please"

Me: "I'm gonna take you tomorrow after work" she shook her head

Amelia: "please don't make me stay" I cupped her face

Me: "I need you here with me in my arms I need to make sure we okay I need to feel your love" I kissed her "please Amelia"

Amelia: "get her to leave Sphe"

Me: "she's leaving we done we were done the moment I saw you I don't know why I haven't told her"
the door opened she got in

Snakho: "so we done? You leaving me for a kid"

Me: "I love her" she dug in her bag took out a couple of short sticks threw them at me

Snakho: "fuck you Sphe you and your barbie" she walked out Amelia picked up the sticks

Amelia: "it pregnancy tests, she's pregnant" I got out my room out the main door ran down the drive way to the gate

Me: "are you fucking crazy Snakhokonke?! Are you sick in the head?!" She wiped her tears "oh don't start with the water works Snakho because I might just slap the living shit out of you"

Snakho: "do you think I want this?! You think I wanna be pregnant with your child right now"

Me: "you did this on fucking purpose Snakho"

Snakho: "why the fuck would I do that Sphe my life is not where I want it to be why would I want to add to my stress"

Me: "you were taking a pill Snakho, did you forget? You did it on purpose didn't you? You will not trap me with a baby Snakho" she wiped her tears

Snakho: "it not yours" I stumbled back as if I've been punched in the stomach

Me: "you lying"

Snakho: "am I?"

Me: "when you come back talking about how that child is mine and I don't believe you" I shook my head and turned to walk away

Snakho: "I didn't want this Sphe! I didn't want to be pregnant with your child while you don't want me anymore"

Me: "the child is not mine"

Snakho: "fine I'll have an abortion"

Me: "I won't be stopping you"

Snakho: "sphelele" I faced her "this is me Sphe your Snakho and you hurting me because of that girl after everything we've been through"

Me: "I love her I'm sorry Snakho I wish I had told you earlier before things got this complicated"

Snakho: "what am I going to do?" I walked to her held her hands kissed them

Me: "I'm here it my child I'll take responsibility for it anything you need I'll be here whenever I won't let you go through this alone"

Snakho: "I need you I want you"

Me: "and you have me just not like that anymore"

Snakho: "what does she have that I don't have"

Me: "nothing. I just love her that's all"

Snakho: "think about this give it some thought call me when you've decided if you want to be a part of our lives or not because me and the baby are a package"

Me: "don't try to trap me Snakho it won't work"

Snakho: "I called your mom"

Me: "why would you do that?!"

Snakho: "I was sick and we were talking she's the one who sent me to a doctor I had to tell her"

Me: "if you were sick you should have called me not my mother" she crossed her arms over her chest pouting she looked so adorable "don't call my mom Snakho"

Snakho: "I'm carrying her grandchild she's excited"

Me: "don't entertain her I'll speak to her first let her know we broke up"

Snakho: "we didn't break up you left me pregnant"

Me: "don't speak like that"

Snakho: "it true"

Me: "come I'll take you to your flat"

Snakho: "no thank you I'm fine!"

Me: "don't be stubborn you know you won't find a taxi" I grabbed her bag

Snakho: "you gonna leave your girlfriend alone here and go down town? She might just burn your house while trying to boil water" I chuckled

Me: "don't be mean"

Snakho: "she's 13"

Me: "she's 18 now come" we walked back up my house "wait here I'll get dressed"

Snakho: "move out of my way Sphe I want food"

Me: "if you hit her we going to have problems"

Snakho: "I won't touch your barbie" we got in I left her in the kitchen found Amelia crying on the bed I went to kneel next to her I don't even know how to explain what I felt at that moment I didn't even know where or how to touch her

Me: "baby my love uhm love" she was just shaking her head her eyes were already puffy and red "tell me what to do, I don't know what to do" I tried touching her face but she moved back "Amelia baby"

Amelia: "take me back to my apartment"

Me: "anything but that" she sniffed wiping her nose with the back of her head her nose was red "look I'll take her to her flat then I'll come back we will talk about this we going to sort this out we love each other" she shook her head

Amelia: "you having a baby with her" I rubbed my forehead pinching it

Me: "it doesn't change anything"

Amelia: "it does"

Me: "it shouldn't. Look babe let me drop her off then I'll come back we will end our weekend perfectly"

Amelia: "I don't want to be here anymore" I wiped her tears with my thumbs then kissed hard she gasped grabbing my hair I deepened the kiss moving until I was on top of her between her legs

Me: "give me 5 minutes" I gave her a soft peck then got off the bed I put on shorts with a t-shirt and flip flops "I love you my love"

Amelia: "I love you" I kissed her head then walked out Snakho was eating a sandwich

Me: "let's go"

Snakho: "I'm not done"

Me: "you will finish in the car let's go" she stood up taking her plate and glass I drove off in a speed

Snakho: "I get that you in a rush but please I don't want to lose my baby"

Me: "how far are you"

Snakho: "seven weeks"

Me: "you going to be so fat"

Snakho: "whatever"

Me: "fucking dirty diapers and vomit shit sleepless nights" I shook my head I was so not ready for this shit

.

#Amelia

*

*

He wouldn't stop calling and I just knew he was back and he had seen the note I left on the fridge it wasn't much just saying that I took an uber back to jhb and that I needed time to process things. After the 10th missed call I answered

Me: "hello"

Sphe: "God baby! Why would you do this to me"

Me: "I'm safe"

Sphe: "I was going to take you to your place tomorrow"

Me: "I didn't want to stay"

Sphe: "you shouldn't be alone right now"

Me: "mom is already on her way" there was silence for awhile

Sphe: "you told your mom? Jesus Amelia she's going to hate me" she already hated him

Me: "she called and I was crying I couldn't lie to her"

Sphe: "baby I'm sorry"

Me: "so am I. Please don't call me I'll call when I'm alright"

Sphe: "don't shut me out and don't ask for something I can't give you" I didn't say anything for a few minutes "you left me, you promised you wouldn't leave me and you left me"

Me: "I didnt leave you I just needed space"

Sphe: "I'm coming there"

Me: "mom will be here any minute from now Sphe she already took off" he cursed

Sphe: "why you doing this to me Amelia? Why?!"

Me: "Sphe I just found out you have been cheating on me all along since we started and she's pregnant. You going to be someone's father I don't see where I fit in anymore I'm not cut out for this children are not my thing"

Sphe: "you leaving me?" He whispered

Me: "I need space" I dropped the call switched off my phone the driver cleared his throat I looked outside the window.

I had taken a bath and was in my pjs when mom got in she threw her bag and on floor and flew to me I already had my arms open we held each other tightly

Mom: "I'm so sorry baby" my tears were already pouring out like rain "you deserve so much better"

Me: "his been lying mama this whole time I thought we were committed to each other but his been seeing her and she's pregnant mama they having a child!"

Mom: "it okay everything will be okay I'm here for you"

Me: "how can I be so stupid? He is older than me obviously sex would be something he needs I should have gave it to him" she pulled back and pointed at me with her index finger

Mom: "I raised a smart young lady who knows very well that she doesn't need to open her legs to keep a man to hell with Sphe"

Me: "I love him and it hurts so bad"

Mom: "I know baby I know but you will be fine I promise you"

Me: "she's beautiful"

Mom: "even if she was Rihanna herself she's no match for Brian's daughter" I smiled she wiped my tears "should we tell uncle Siya how a boy broke your heart"

Me: "he will kill him"

Mom: "exactly"

Me: "I still love him so much" she sighed

Mom: "I know baby I know. It will get better"

Me: "can we gain weight now" she chuckled

Mom: "of cookies baby what do you want order whatever you want. Let me answer my phone other wise your father might just send Siya over here to check on us" she stood up "hello hubby" she giggled walking away "no you just want to be in between my legs trying to make me pregnant" she disappeared going upstairs I took my phone only to regret switching it on when voicemails from Sphe and Hope came pouring I called spur ordered some ribs and burgers mom was taking lot of time on the phone the food even got delivered I paid then went to call her she was on top of the bed in the guest room giggling like a teenager

Me: "food is here come" she nodded I went to the lounge she came in as I settled down she sits next to me I had White Chicks and For Colored Girls on blue ray so she played in

Mom: "fuck this feels good" I chuckled she was enjoying the burger more than I was

Me: "you know dada could buy you whole spur if you asked him"

Mom: "yes he would then he would make sure I gym everyday" we finish eating I put my head on her lap while popping some fries and onion rings in my mouth

Me: "how come you just found dada mama? his obsessed with you and he treats you like a queen like you made of glass" she sighed and kissed my cheek

Me: "well I've only had two guys in my life your father and the douche. It was my first year in varsity he was hot charming with amazing swag girls loved him they all wanted a piece of him but he wanted me even though he had someone else I got in a relationship with him because it felt right he made me feel foreign things I made the biggest mistake of my life I put aside my morals lowered my standard allowed him to make me his side chick. He had had a few of them before but he didn't claim them in public like he did with me he made sure everyone knew I was his girl he was possessive over me very jealous he

made me feel powerful in his arms like it didn't matter that someone had his heart. I thought I was in love that we were happy until I went on instagram saw a video of him proposing to his pregnant girlfriend"

Me: "ouch"

Mom: "love doesn't hurt baby it only makes you suffer when you doing it with the wrong person. Sphe could be your right person or he could be not we don't know only you and him know what you two share and if it strong enough to survive everything. Your father and I have had our shares of troubles but we stayed and fought for each other because we knew our love was worth it"

Me: "you saying I should forgive him"

Mom: "I'm saying you know what you deserve don't lower your standards if his not it move on but I definitely think you deserve someone else not him he comes to baggage and you too young for that. You just started varsity you need to live your life to the fullest but responsibility of course"

Me: "I love him so much"

Mom: "and I know he loves you" she kissed my head "open up" I opened my mouth she stuffed some ice cream in "Oreo ice cream best thing in the world"

Me: "better than sex" she smacked my arm laughing

Mom: "I'm still your mother Amelia I gave birth to you don't speak to me like that"

Me: "you know we hear you and dada right? Why do you think we don't use the jacuzzi anymore?" She had her face covered with her hands laughing

Mom: "even if you hear us don't tell me about it please"

Me: "you and dada are old you should stop now"

Mom: "I'm only 37 and your father is 57 that's not old we can still have a baby you know"

Me: "5 is enough"

Mom: "whatever!" were still laughing when the alarm beeped indicating that a door just opened "who else has keys besides you and your father" was about to answer when he came in the lounge I stood up I had given him the spare keys

Sphe: "I couldn't" he looked awful his eyes swollen and red he had his hands in his pocket looking down

Mom: "you got lot of nerves young man"

Sphe: "Mrs James"

Mom: "mmh" she walked out the lounge going upstairs

Me: "what you doing here Sphe?"

Sphe: "you said you wouldn't leave I'm not going to let you go back on your promise"

Me: "I just needed space. You have to go! Sphe you can't do this to me"

Sphe: "it late I have a headache and I haven't eaten since last night I can't drive back to Mp"

Me: "you can't stay here my mother is here" he walked closer to me "Sphe stop please" he did and looked at me with his eyebrows together

Sphe: "Amelia I'm sorry if I could change things I would I swear, you know I would"

Me: "go to Hope's house"

Sphe: "come with me" he took his hand out and reached for me I moved back shaking my head

Me: "I can't and you being here while you knew my mom was here is disrespectful Sphe you disrespecting her you shouldn't have came here"

Sphe: "I didn't mean it like that Amelia you know and I'll apologize to your mother"

Me: "you shouldn't have came!!" His face changed from apologetic to a flash of annoyance

Sphe: "don't raise your voice at me" I raised my eyebrow after rolling my eyes

Me: "leave"

Sphe: "no"

Me: "you do know that my uncle's house is just few streets away, right?"

Sphe: "I don't care Amelia call your uncle let him beat me up or shoot or whatever I don't care as long as the end of it all you would have forgiven me and taken me back because you know I can't leave with you I don't know why you punishing me like this. I made a mistake I fucked up big time now I can't get myself out of this mistake but just don't leave me I'll sort this out I promise"

Me: "will you make the baby and it's mother disappear" he looked down again shaking his head "you know your way out"

Sphe: "Amelia please" he whispered

Me: "no I'm sorry I thought I wanted space but I actually don't. I want you out of my life Sphe I don't need the baggage or the stress you coming with now I'm sorry but I'm done we done there's no us anymore I can't do th.." he dropped to his knees before I finished the sentence he didn't say anything he didn't make a sound all I saw was his shoulders rising and falling

Sphe: "please you hurting me please" I barely heard him

Me: "I'm sorry I really am but please leave go sort things out with your baby mama" after few minutes of silence I went to the door held it open "Sphe you need to leave I have classes in the morning" he brought his eyes up

Sphe: "what am I without you Amelia?"

Me: "Snakho's boyfriend your child's father" he stood up and walked to me when he reached for me grabbing my arms I screamed he moved back quickly "leave Sphe please! Please!!" He walked out "my keys?"

Sphe: "don't do this Amelia"

Me: "my keys sphelele" he took them out threw them on the floor then walked away I banged the door shut locking it before I slid down until my ass touched the cold tiles I tried holding it in but I couldn't at first it came out soft after that it turned into loud sobs mom sat next to me and pulled my head to her chest with her arms around me

Insert 6

^

^

#Amelia

*

*

I woke up when my alarm rang I looked over mama was asleep next to me snoring softly I removed her weave from her face my mother was the most beautiful woman on earth dad really was lucky. I got off the bed went to take a bath got out I got dressed in ripped denim shorts and a lose top with a denim choker tied my weave into a messy bun I got out of the closet carrying my bag mom wasn't in bed I went downstairs found her making breakfast while singing along to a song that was playing on the radio

Me: "morning Mrs James" I kissed her cheek

Mama: "morning baby, you look pretty"

Me: "I feel pretty" I poured myself coffee

Mama: "that's good, how are you post Sphe?" I sighed and took a long sip of my coffee

Me: "it going to take sometime mama you know that"

Mama: "yes I do baby" she gave me a plate filled with english breakfast then joined me on the high chairs

Me: "when are you leaving?"

Mama: "chasing me out of your apartment already? I'll leave in a few days Mbali is on leave at work I'll spend sometime with her and my nephews"

Me: "alright"

Mama: "when last did you speak to your brother?"

Me: "been awhile, why?"

Mama: "don't lose contact with him Amelia"

Me: "yes mother"

Mama: "finish up so I can take you to school"

Me: "you got a car here"

Mama: "yeah Siya dropped it off earlier when you were bathing"

Me: "can't wait to get my drivers license so I can get my car"

Mama: "soon as you turn 18 baby" she pulled my cheek "you gaining weight sign up for a gym"

Me: "will do I saw virgin active close by"

Mama: "let's go you will finish eating in the car" she took her car keys she was still in pjs

Me: "what's the rush Mrs James"

Mama: "you going to be late" I grabbed my bag she took it from it I took my plate and juice we left she dropped me off on campus Tracy came to us

Tracy: "Mrs James" they hugged I looked at guys staring at mom with lust and desire mom looked like she was 22

Mama: "Tracy! How is varsity? You two taking care of each other"

Tracy: "it okay we haven't really started to hectic work and yes we taking care if each other"

Mama: "good, let me go these students are staring at me like they've never seen someone in pjs"

Tracy: "it because you hot Mrs James" mom chuckled kissed our cheeks

Mama: "call me when you need to be picked up, Tracy come over for dinner"

Us: "okay"

Mama: "love you baby"

Me: "love you" she pecked my lips and got in the car driving off in a speed some boys whistled

Tracy: "I wanna be like your mom when I grow up" we laughed

Me: "she's something else"

Tracy: "come let's go get coffee" we went to her car drove off to the coffee shop "your brother called last night" I rolled my eyes they relationship was confusing Tracy loved him but Marcel ha.a that dude has only ever been into Sihle

Me: "saying what?"

Tracy: "I'm going to visit him this weekend" she squealed "I can't wait! Haven't seen him for ages"

Me: "you two been doing this since grade 11, why don't you move on? Date Keenan his been asking you out for ages" she rolled her eyes

Tracy: "you wouldn't understand Amelia you still a virgin it not easy to forget your first"

Me: "yeah yeah whatever"

Tracy: "how you feeling? First day post Sphe" I sighed

Me: "I don't know how I feel I'm just numb I guess I'm ignoring the fact that we broke up"

Tracy: "there's really no chance of you two getting back together"

Me: "no there isn't, I'm basically still 17 doing my first year in this beautiful city I need to have fun and not play stepmother"

Tracy: "you love him though"

Me: "it not enough" we got our coffee went back to campus. Campus was campus mom left later during the week dad fetched her saying she's been gone for too long the bed was cold and Brianna also needed her mama which was a lie Brianna was a daddy's girl he just missed her. Weeks went by this one weekend Sphe showed up at my place begging for me to hear him out but I didn't have the energy to Hope wouldn't stop calling eventually I answered we went for lunch me Thando and her of course they begged me to listen to their brother give him another chance but I couldn't I didn't want to. I was in tutorial room waiting for our tutor Ethan some colored guy who was asking me out but I wasn't interested he had went as far as stealing my number, I was busy on my phone chatting to Marcel mom was sending Brianna to visit me so Marcel was also going to come the three of us were going to spend the weekend together when some guy sat next to me the other one sat on my other side putting me in the middle of them

Guy: "the Amelia James the rich kid" I raised my eyebrow sitting back "I'm Lizwi that is Wandile"

Me: "hi, and you know me how?"

Wandile: "we just know you" I rolled my eyes

Lizwi: "we've seen you around the campus with that white girl Tracy, we wanna be friends with you" I looked at them just as Ethan walked in he looked around until his eyes found me his smile turned into a frown when he saw who was sitting next to me

Wandile: "looks like Mr heart eyes doesn't approve of our friendship" we laughed that's how I went from being friends with just Tracy to being in a group of five it was the boys, lindela wandile's girlfriend and Tracy.

#Marcel

*

*

I chuckled

Anastasia: "I promise you Marcel I'm telling the truth"

Me: "and I'm not saying you not Ana why you trying to convince me" she was a girl I was fooling around with on campus we did the same course

Anastasia: "just that it like you don't believe me" she smiled "I miss you, when are you coming back?"

Me: "when we open" it was already June first semester had just flew by

Anastasia: "I could always catch a flight come there"

Me: "want to meet my parents already" she looked down blushing the door opened and my angel walked in she locked the door I ended my call with Anastasia switched off my phone same time "naughty" she giggled and walked to the bed I pulled her me "I hate that you losing so much weight"

Sihle: "and I love it" she was losing weight getting taller and curvey "mama and dada are asleep well everyone is asleep"

Me: "and you missed your man" she nodded I pushed back a few strands of her thin braids that came to her face and kissed her she kissed me back with heat I pulled back when she started breathing heavily "Nosihle"

Sihle: "what?" I shook my head

Me: "you know what" she sighed

Sihle: "why can't we do it Marcel? Is someone else giving you some? That's why"

Me: "no you being crazy, get under the cover I'll switch off the light" I pushed her off me went to switch off the light I went to bed get on my side held her from behind "stop" she kept on rubbing her ass against my dick

Sihle: "Khanya"

Me: "yes baby"

Sihle: "why won't you make love to me"

Me: "because you still a child and you not ready for that" she turned to face me

Sihle: "but I am ready Marcel! I'm not a child all my friends are doing it" I sat up as I started thinking about some idiot on top of my little sister all hell would break lose I might soft when compared to my brothers but I'd kill someone for my sisters

Me: "what do you mean all your friends are doing it?"

Sihle: "from school"

Me: "nosihle" she rolled her eyes and sat up "what is it with you?"

Sihle: "should I go back to my room khanya? You just landed today but you already trying to start things with me. Varsity is changing you" she attempted to get off the bed but I held her pulled her back then wrapped in arms around her we laid there with her heart pounding against my stomach I kissed her head

Me: "I love you nosihle with all that I am" she breathed out

Sihle: "I love you more"

Me: "talk to me my naughty girl" she giggled and held me tighter

Sihle: "just that you just got here and I'll be leaving in a week school opens, I want to do things with you Marcel"

Me: "you know we not at that stage of our relationship I'm in no rush to have sex you shouldn't too and baby it risky they are things we can't prevent 100 % you know uncle vuyani would kill me"

Sihle: "he won't"

Me: "let's sleep. Everyone is going to mthwalume tomorrow to clean grandpa's grave stay make up some excuse I'll do the same I want to take you out"

Sihle: "really baby?! Our first date"

Me: "yes" she kissed my chest

Sihle: "I'm excited"

Me: "you should be" she looked up at me I cupped her face "even in the dark and your hair pointing in different directions" she giggled punching my shoulder "you still the most beautiful girl I've ever met"

Sihle: "Marcel you going to make me cry" we kissed

.

I woke up in bed alone Sihle had sneaked out already I went to the bathroom washed my face brushed my teeth then went back to bed looking for my phone but didn't find it. I went downstairs found the whole family eating breakfast aunty Sthe and uncle Mbiso were home I greeted only sihle didn't reply I sat down on a chair across hers dished up for myself

Dad: "Marcel since you not leaving watch over your little sister she's getting flu if it gets worse take her to the surgery have the ped check her out"

Amelia: "why is Marcel not going?"

Me: "got things to do"

Sihle: "I don't think Marcel will have time dada I'm sure he will be with his girlfriend" mom coughed I stared at Sihle in disbelief

Mom: "girl ... girlfriend? You dating Marcel?!"

Dad: "my boy! Finally, when do we get to meet her? What's her name?"

Sihle: "Anastasia dada" I felt my heart pounding fast I actually wanted to cry

Me: "I'm sorry" my parents looked at me confused I stood up went up to my room I threw myself on the bed sighing loudly I was really stupid I should have cleaned my phone.

I guess I fell asleep because I was woken up by someone shaking me I opened my eyes it was dad

Dada: "we leaving son" I nodded and sat up "what's wrong with you?"

Me: "nothing I'm fine I just fell asleep"

Dada: "okay don't forget to check on your little sister please and your mom wants me to talk to you about girlfriends and sex I guess when we come back we will have that talk"

Me: "I don't need a talk dada I'm not a kid" he raised his eyebrow with his hands in his pockets and a smirk on his face

Dada: "is that so?"

Me: "yes"

Dada: "well good I'm glad you growing up becoming less of a mama's boy it good but we still going to have our talk. You drink now?"

Me: "I'm not under age Dada" he chuckled nodding

Dada: "it time you stopped calling me dada you grown now, right? Anyway we will go have dinner couple of drinks and talk later"

Me: "okay see you later"

Dada: "I can still kiss you right Mr I'm grown" I huffed nodding he kissed my head "I love you kid"

Me: "I love you too pops"

Dada: "sounds better" he walked out closing the door after him I waited for a few minutes before I went to Sihle's room I knocked then got in locking the door behind me she was in bed busy on her phone

Me: "baby" she didn't say anything "baby" she looked at me then went back to her phone I walked over to the bed got under the covers she faced away from me I got closer to her she was chatting to Brianna on whatsapp "I love you" I kissed her neck

Sihle: "you don't cheat on someone you love"

Me: "good because I didn't cheat on. Anyway what were doing on my phone? Actually how did you even crack my passwords?"

Sihle: "dad and Sfundu and tech wiz there's I can't do that has to do with technology Marcel you know that switching off your phone wasn't going to stop me from doing what I wanted" I sighed because it was true

Me: "I don't love anyone but you though I don't care what you think you saw or read you all I've ever loved foe every long time" she turned to face me

Sihle: "what about her? Is it because she's older than me? She's your age, is it because she can have sex with you?"

Me: "no it because I was stupid and trying to be cool which we both know I'm not"

Sihle: "is she the reason you won't have sex with me?"

Me: "no baby you just not ready" she kissed me hard and deeply I kissed her back just as hard and deeply she pushed down my pj bottom I tried pulling back but she moved with me when she grabbed my dick squeezing the tip I couldn't help the moan that came out of my mouth I felt her lips curving into a smile she moved back

Sihle: "make love to me Marcel please" her voice was soft and seductive I shut my eyes shaking my head before getting on top of her she opened her legs widely we kissed our tongues sliding against each other teasing each other when I pulled back we were both breathing heavily I took off her dress followed by her underwear and my pyjamas when my dick sprung freely she visibly swallowed

Me: "I can stop" she shook her head

Sihle: "you really gorgeous Marcel sometimes it takes me by surprise just how good looking you are at times I don't even know what you see in me I'm just a kid" I trailed my fingers slowly all over her body

Me: "you might be 14 nosihle but to me it doesn't matter I've loved you since you were 12 and sometimes I ask myself why you would risk everything by being with me. You amazingly beautiful baby in and out the fact that you sexy and smart is a bonus"

Sihle: "I'm fat"

Me: "you losing so much weight I hate it but you never were fat love you were thick and fucking sexy you still sexy I love and cherish your body it turns me on every time" she held my chin

Sihle: "then make love to me" I went back to kissing her I moved from her lips to her jawline down her neck she tilted her head back giving me space as her head ran up and down my back her soft moans got a little louder when I sucked her boob biting it while my hands squeezed the other pinching it nipple I went down leaving soft kisses all over her body she screamed a little when I pressed my tongue on her clit "baby"

Me: "yes love"

Sihle: "it feels so good" I grinned before going back to her pussy I put my hands under ass lifting it up and ate her penetrating her with my tongue and sucking on her clit when I felt her muscles clenching around my tongue as she pushed my head deeper I pulled back she whimpered causing me to chuckle I went to her lips we kissed "you tasting amazing"

Me: "it all you baby and you certainly taste amazing" I kissed her neck softly biting it careful to not leave marks while I rubbed her clit furiously I slowly entered my middle finger in her she moaned a little when I pushed it deeper she hissed calling my name after a few strokes I put in the second one she bit her bottom lip hard closing her eyes "you still good love?"

Sihle: "God yes Marcel" I moved them around going in and out and in circles opening her up no to blow my own horn but brother is gifted in the dick department. When her body started shaking I moved them faster went down to sucking her clit flicking my tongue on it until she came loudly screaming my name I prayed that Thembeke wasn't around the third floor. I kept going until she calm down I went up and gave her a soft peck

Me: "you okay baby?" She nodded shyly

Sihle: "that felt so good baby" she kissed me "wow"

Me: "you still want to continue? We can stop now Sihle we don't have to continue I can keep doing this to you making you feel good without actually having to do it baby" she shook her head

Sihle: "I want to continue Khanya please" she brought my face to hers we started kissing again she kept moaning softly as I was rubbing my tip on her pussy hitting her clit I put the tip in she squirmed a little

Me: "it going to hurt baby please try to not be loud Thembeke might be in the house" she nodded with her lips tightened "I love you Nosihle"

Sihle: "I love you too" I kept pushing in my dick when I felt her barrier I covered her lips with mine and held her tightly before pushing through it braking it even our lips couldn't keep her scream down she screamed so loud and immediately started crying I moved my upper body back and wiped her tears but they kept coming she was shaking her head

Sihle: "I want us to stop now Marcel get off me it hurts"

Me: "the worst is over believe me" I looked down at where we were joined I couldn't help the proud smile that crept up my face the beast I didn't even know I had within me roared to life jumping up and down rejoicing I didn't even feel like this with Tracy when we both lost our virginity to each other

Sihle: "you smiling like a fool while I'm in pain Marcel" she punched my shoulder

Me: "I'm sorry baby, sorry okay? I need to move now, will you handle that?" She shook her head with her eyes all wide

Sihle: "I won't Marcel you killing me it hurts" I kissed her then moved back slowly before going in again deeper this time her nails dug into my back I groaned at the pain that came with pleasure I kept moving slowly until I felt my orgasm coming I couldn't hold myself I went a little faster she cried louder punching me telling me to stop until I crashed hard emptying myself in her I collapsed on top of her breathing heavily

Me: "I love you nosihle I really do and you've just given me something I'll always cherish" she sniffed and winced in pain as I pulled out I laid next to her and pulled her to lay on top of me I kissed her head "I'm sorry okay? It going to get better I promise next time we do it you will also enjoy"

Sihle: "okay" I kissed her head again

Me: "how about I take you out?"

Sihle: "I don't think I can walk" we laughed

Me: "I'll carry you come I want to show you off" I held her a little before putting her aside I got off the bed wore my pyjama she was staring at me with a smile on her face I went to her bathroom prepared a bath for her with salts then went out I found staring at the sheet that had blood

Sihle: "I bled" I took it from her

Me: "yes it normal I'll take it to the laundry room now go bath and get ready I'll do the same" I held her chin and kissed her deeply when I pulled back I pressed my forehead on hers "I love you baby"

Sihle: "I love you too"

.

#Sphe

*

*

I looked at Snakho as she stuffed her face with chocolate chip ice cream moaning in appreciation our baby was growing in her she was 7 months pregnant it seemed like our son was growing everyday because she kept getting fatter and fatter with every passing day she had moved in with me since she stays alone in her flat mom suggested she moves in with me so I can watch over her. Well we were back together it not like I had a choice after a month of begging Amelia both over the phone and in person I eventually gave up there was no point she didn't love me enough to look pass my mistake and try hard to make what we had work as upset as Snakho was she was also only too willing to take me back so we fixed things but marriage was not even on my mind even though she and mom kept hinting it

Snakho: "Sphe did you replace my chicken?" She pinched my arm bringing me back to life

Me: "what chicken?"

Snakho: "remember you ate my chicken? The kfc and you said you will replace it"

Me: "it in the fridge I'll warm it for you"

Snakho: "okay thank you" I paused the game I was watching moved her feet from my thighs went to the kitchen I took out her chicken out three pieces on a plate popped it in the microwave put the remaining one in the fridge I took out my phone browsed through instagram when I saw Amelia's picture I couldn't help myself I went to her profile baby girl was enjoying her varsity life they were so many pictures of her going out to restaurants and clubs she had even been to Pretoria with her group of friends which included two boys and three girls one of which was Tracy her friend from back at home I sighed as the microwave beeped. I took the meat back to the lounge she put aside her empty ice cream bowl after taking one piece I gave her the plate she frowned her lips started shaking

Me: "ha.a Snakho" I knew she was about to cry

Snakho: "but it mine" her one tear dropped

Me: "I bought a whole bucket there's still a whole lot more in the fridge" she smiled and wiped her tears

Snakho: "okay" she moved and came to sit between my legs I brought her closer and circled my arms around her she looked up at me we kissed "I love you we love you me and Malisakhe"

Me: "I love you both with all that I am" we kissed I brushed her stomach my boy kicked I chuckled "you can daddy's touch my boy" he kicked harder then started moving I could see the movements it still amazed me as to how something happening inside can be visible outside

Snakho: "he really likes your voice and touch" I moved my hand down until I reached the band of her leggings I put my hand in touched her pussy she moaned she was wet well she was usually wet these days all it took was my lips on her and my touch

Me: "looks like mommy also likes daddy's touch"

Snakho: "mommy always does" I sank my finger in she moaned "God Sphe" my boy kicked again I chuckled

Me: "you forever ready" my phone rang "Liam"

Liam: "where are you?"

Me: "my house. Why?"

Liam: "I'm coming over"

Me: "no I'm bonding with my family"

Liam: "I'm also your family so I'm coming, tell that pregnant balloon to cook I'll sleep over I'm tired of take aways I'll bring alcohol"

Me: "Liam bru"

Liam: "you such a stupid shit, how can you let Amelia go? I saw her at taboo few weeks back wearing this tight as fitting short dress and heels she looked sexy as fuck if you hadn't loved her so much I would have made my moves on her" I cleared my throat moved Snakho back got off the couch going to the kitchen

Me: "who was she with?"

Liam: "some two varsity fuck boys and a white girl with amazing boobs bru the kind you could lose your face in"

Me: "was she cosy with any of those boys" he laughed

Liam: "you still want her little brother? You know having a child doesn't mean you have to marry the girl? I heard how mom was talking about doing right by Snakho don't let her bully you Sphe"

Me: "you didn't answer my question"

Liam: "no she wasn't cosy with any of them they all looked like friends. Tell Snakho to cook I'm leaving now"

Me: "alright" he dropped the call I went back to the lounge "Liam is coming over he says his hungry and misses home cooked meal"

Snakho: "okay I'll cook"

Hours later Liam and I were drinking while watching soccer snacking on some hot wings Snakho had long gone to bed she went to sleep after dinner saying she has light cramps

Liam: "sex with a pregnant woman really is the best bru I'm telling you" I chuckled

Me: "who did you sleep with Liam because you don't even have a child" he grinned

Liam: "so I ran into this ex of mine at the mall she was pregnant and married to some tender guy I told her let's catch lunch so we did she started telling me how she misses my sex how her husband doesn't do her right I laughed and said she must get in her car and follow me back to my house she looked at me with her eyes wide open before she nodded" I laughed

Me: "you disgusting"

Liam: "I'm just not stingy with Mntungwa I wasn't given a big dick to not share it with people in need"
Snakho screamed in the bedroom I ran there I found her rolling in bed crying

Me: "baby? Baby what's wrong? Talk to me"

Snakho: "it hurts Sphe it hurts so bad"

Me: "Liam start the car we taking her to the hospital"

Liam: "sure" he ran out I pulled back the cover and involuntary stepped back I had never seen that much blood it was as if we just slaughtered a cow there even clots

Snakho: "God Sphe help me" I covered her to the comforter then lifted her up she kept crying holding her stomach I ran out Liam locked the door we got in the car I kept rocking Snakho back and forth as Liam drove off in a speed

Me: "sssh it okay my love"

Snakho: "please my son Sphe please I don't want to lose him" I wiped her face that was filled with tears and sweat

Me: "Masilakhe will be fine his strong" I kissed her trembling lips and looked up as my brain kept going back to the blood that was on the sheet

Insert 7

^

^

#Sphe

*

*

I was pacing up and down in the waiting room Liam was on his phone talking to our parents the look the doctor gave me as they rushed Snakho to a ward made me lose that little bit of hope it was a look of pity and sadness. The door opened the doctor got in she took off her hat and looked down for a moment before looking at us liam was already brushing my back

Doc: "I'm sorry Mr khumalo we tried everything we could but it was already late when you brought her in the baby didn't make it" after that I didn't hear anything my head started spinning I dropped to my

knees I tried holding it in Liam knelt next to me he held the back of my neck pressed our forehead together

Liam: "cry" I shook my head "do it Sphe cry"

Me: "I want Hope" he nodded

Liam: "she will be here she's on her way" I looked down "cry let it out" my shoulders started shaking my tears dropped then a loud cry tore me inside out he held me as I cried louder.

.

#Amelia

*

*

I was woken up by my phone ringing non stop I reached for it and answered without checking the caller ID but when he said hi I sat up switched on the side lamp

Sphe: "please say something" I cleared my throat

Me: "hi" he sighed

Sphe: "I don't know how else to call. God Amelia it hurts so bad"

Me: "what's wrong?"

Sphe: "I ... I lost the baby Snakho had a miscarriage" he broke down

Me: "where are you?"

Sphe: "home"

Me: "I'm coming"

Sphe: "you can't drive this late"

Me: "I'm coming I'll call you when I'm closer" I dropped the call got off the bed I put on a robe went to mom's room I knocked after awhile she opened rubbing her eyes

Mom: "what's wrong?" I moved from the door she followed me closing it behind her

Me: "I need to go to mhlanga" she raised her eyebrow "Sphe is home he needs me"

Mom: "you two broke up"

Me: "mama please he called me crying he lost his child please" she sighed

Mom: "I can't let you drive this late alone Amelia"

Me: " was hoping I could take a driver"

Mom: "and your father will find out"

Me: "mama please I'm begging you please his broken he needs me" I wiped my tears "I love him please"

Mom: "it not your problem anymore Amelia"

Me: "mah" She sighed

Mom: "wait" I nodded she walked back in I waited for her for a few minutes she came "come" we walked downstairs

Me: "are you going to drive me?"

Mom: "no the driver will" we walked over to the driver's house they all stayed together along with security while Thembeke had her own place all within the yard

Me: "dada won't find out"

Mom: "they work for me as much as they work for him" I nodded "Amelia I love you baby girl but wake me up again for shit like this we going to have problems and I will tell your father"

Me: "sorry mama I panicked" we got to the house it opened before we even knocked

Cebo: "Mrs James is everything okay"

Mom: "I need you to drive my daughter to mhlanga wait for her until she's done and bring her back"

Cebo: "yes ma'am"

Mom: "this stays here, clear?"

Cebo: "clear" she looked at me

Mom: "two hours Amelia I'm giving you two hours you stay longer I'll be pissed"

Me: "two hours I promise" I hugged her briefly "thank you" we left I called Sphe as we turned the corner to his home

Sphe: "babe"

Me: "please come out"

Sphe: "drive in I'll open the gate"

Me: "okay" the gate opened as we drove towards the house cebo drove in there were so many cars parked outside the garage he parked on the driveway just as Sphe got out the door I got out ran to him he lifted me up and held me tightly crying "I'm so sorry Sphe so sorry" he didn't say anything just held me he put me down when I started shivering after what felt like 20 minutes "Sphe" I held his cheeks his eyes were swollen and red he took my hand walked in I followed him "I can't stay Sphe" he nodded we went up to his room he locked the door picked me up we got under the covers and he held me tightly putting his head on my breasts and my leg on his waist "Sphe you have to talk to me"

Sphe: "I don't know what to say Amelia it hurts" I kissed his head he looked up and kissed me I moved back "please"

Me: "you hurting right now Sphe and I wanna be here for you don't confuse things"

Sphe: "I never stopped loving you"

Me: "where is Snakho?"

Sphe: "in the guest room"

Me: "Sphe! You can't bring me here while she's here" he chuckled

Sphe: "funny enough she knows I love you not her she just choose to ignore it. We having a memorial service tomorrow just my family and hers the body was burnt dad thought it will be a good idea so tomorrow we going to my grandparents house gonna have a small thing there pour the ashes by the other graves in the yard"

Me: "how you feeling by all of that?"

Sphe: "I wish I hadn't demanded I see his tiny body that's an image I'll never get out of my mind Amelia" he started crying again "he was so tiny his fingers were stuck together and.." I held him tighter as he cried louder someone knocked

Me: "Sphe?" He shook his head

Sphe: "I'm fine!!"

Yammy: "open the door I wanna see for myself"

Sphe: "give me space mom"

Yammy: "I've given you enough space now open the door" he tried moving but I held him tighter

Me: "it won't be right if she sees me here Sphe especially with Snakho just on the passage"

Sphe: "mom take my word for it"

Yammy: "thought I heard another voice"

Sphe: "you didn't go to sleep"

Yammy: "okay baby I love you"

Sphe: "love you too mom" he looked at me "I love you"

Me: "you hurting"

Sphe: "I never stopped" he lifted my face with my chin we kissed it got more and more heated with every passing second he untied my robe he groaned when his hands landed on my exposed thighs I pushed him back

Me: "I'm here for you as a friend Sphe that's all please don't make this hard we broke up months ago" he nodded and rested his head on my breasts

Sphe: "thank you for coming" I played with his hair

Me: "what happened? How did she miscarry?"

Sphe: "the baby was growing out of her womb her doctor should have picked it up but he didn't"

Me: "were you with her when it happened?" He nodded searching my eyes "you went back to her?" I don't even know why I wanted to hurt myself like that by asking

Sphe: "what choice did I have"

Me: "I haven't been with anyone else but maybe I should"

Sphe: "I will kill whoever comes close to you Amelia you mine" I rolled my eyes

Me: "don't come with double standard bullshit sphelele" he laughed I actually found myself smiling it was his genuine carefree laugh that I loved and missed so much

Sphe: "double standard bullshit hhu" I nodded he was still laughing "I love you Amelia"

Me: "I love you Sphe" I quickly covered my mouth with my hand while he laughed louder half closing his eyes I hadn't meant to say it back it just happened he gave me a soft peck

Sphe: "come with me to my grandparents house"

Me: "no Sphe that's wrong you should be with Snakho through this she's also hurting she understands what you going through more than anyone"

Sphe: "but I want you babe you make me forget and laugh but I guess you right. I might need you but she needs me"

Me: "yes" he looked at me with a smile

Sphe: "I want you back Amelia but I guess we will speak about that later"

Me: "I need to go"

Sphe: "it's too soon"

Me: "mom gave me two hours that include the driving" he moved up and got on top of me "what you doing?" He opened up my legs with his hips

Sphe: "making love to my girl"

Me: "Sphe no!" He laughed

Sphe: "why not?" He put his hands under my vests I smacked him he took them out laughing "a kiss at least?"

Me: "no"

Sphe: "fuck that" he kissed me deeply I couldn't help the moan that came out of my mouth he squeezed my breast I moaned louder

Me: "Sphe" he moved from my lips to my neck he bit me I started squirming someone knocked hard Sphe moved back

Sphe: "what"

???: "want me to scream so mom comes out" Sphe rolled his eyes

Sphe: "Liam"

Liam: "open"

Me: "are all your siblings here?" He nodded and got off me he went to the door as soon as he opened it Liam pushed him away from the door and got in he looked at me and smiled widely

Liam: "well well what the fuck is it Amelia James in my little brother's bed, isn't this fancy?"

Sphe: "Liam" Liam walked closer to bed I held the comforter closer Sphe pulled him back "dude"

Liam: "dude!" He chuckled "she looks better in bed"

Sphe: "dude fuck no" Liam nodded with a wide grin Sphe grinned as well "okay yeah now fuck off" Liam chuckled

Liam: "you sly dog" he hit his shoulder "Nzuzo would be proud" he looked between Sphe and I shook his head "keep it down please my room is just next to this one" he walked out chuckling I breathed out Sphe locked the door

Me: "your brother"

Sphe: "you can't hate him" he came back to bed "where were we"

Me: "ha.a I'm going home now, why is he dressed at this time?"

Sphe: "he was out he just got back" he kissed me we kissed shortly then we walked out "I'll see you before I leave"

Me: "Sphe this doesn't change anything"

Sphe: "it changes everything babe. I'm coming for you Amelia with all that I've got you mine no one else will get to even touch you" he kissed my forehead "I love you" he opened the door I got in we drove off

Cebo: "not to speak out of turn Amelia but your father will not approve especially of that guy"

Me: "okay" I took out my phone started chatting to lizwi since he was online

.

#Sihle

*

*

I stared at Marcel he was asleep with his thick pinkish lips slightly open his hair was cut into a very short fade you could hardly tell his hair was curly. I consider myself very lucky no many girls get to be loved by the very first person they ever had a crush on and getting to share love with him was something I never thought was possible having him be my first in everything was a dream come true for me yeah sure I could probably should had waited but I didn't want to I wanted to experience love making and I wanted to do it with him. I chuckled at the memory of him actually telling me that he loves me for the first time he was still in school still had his bracs on at least mama had let him wear eye lenses when he got to

grade 10 then those specs he used to wear. I was in room listening to music Brianna had just stepped out he quickly got in locked the door behind him

Marcel: "I have something to tell you"

Me: "yes" he started sweating I sat up removing my phone from my stomach

Marcel: "I love you"

Me: "I know I also love you"

Marcel: "I know I'm older I'm your brother I shouldn't but I can't keep it in anymore" he started talking fast as he always does when nervous I got off the bed walked to him he backed away while talking until he met the door I kissed him he took awhile to kiss me back but when he did it was pure magic I could feel the fireworks we pulled apart he started talking again apologizing I kissed him again after awhile we pulled apart

Me: "why you nervous" he breathed out chuckling grabbing his afro

Marcel: "you something else Nosihle" I giggled "my naughty girl"

And that was a year ago we were a year old now but I was still madly in love with him mommy has told me how dangerous first love is but I don't care I know Marcel his goofy and nerdy hurting me like how mommy said guys hurt girls is far fetched I looked at the time on his phone it was late I needed to go to my room before Brianna comes to my room this was the hardest part about our relationship hiding it from Brianna while we talked about everything and anything but she wouldn't understand worse she hasn't even had a crush let alone fallen in love with anyone. I kissed Marcel he opened his eyes and pulled me in for a deeper kiss after awhile we pulled apart

Marcel: "morning my angel"

Me: "morning baby I need to go"

Marcel: "I'll see you at breakfast, what time are you leaving?" I sighed

Me: "I think after breakfast I'm not sure daddy didn't tell me"

Marcel: "I'm gonna miss you"

Me: "me too. Maybe I can come during one weekend"

Marcel: "just let me know I'll come home" he got on top of me "I wish you could come visit me in cape spend the whole weekend just the two of us" I sighed

Me: "I want that so bad" we kissed his hands went all over my body squeezing certain parts making me moan I opened my legs wider when he started grinding on me "Marcel"

Marcel: "baby" his dick was directly on my castle

Me: "it late"

Marcel: "don't care"

Me: "no Marcel" I pushed him off

Marcel: "but I'm hard" I giggled

Me: "sorry love" I pushed him he got off me I got off the bed put on my pjs I kissed his cheek got out met Amelia by the door she raised her eyebrow I looked down she laughed

Amelia: "I knew it"

Me: "I don't know what you talking about" I walked away with my heart pounding

.

#Marcel

*

*

When Amelia got in my room with a smirk on her face immediately after Sihle left I just knew she saw her. She threw herself on my bed

Amelia: "I can smell her on your sheet and pillow"

Me: "smell who"

Amelia: "nosihle our little sister" I rolled my eyes

Me: "yeah so"

Amelia: "yeah so?! She's a kid Marcel not just any kid uncle vuyani's little girl"

Me: "it not like I'm going to hurt her Amelia I love her"

Amelia: "judging from what happened in breakfast few days back that whole Anastasia situation and you still got Tracy all gaga over you "

Me: "It was a misunderstanding we sorted it out we good now I love her Amelia"

Amelia: "and Tracy"

Me: "it not my fault she keeps coming back to me" she shook her head

Amelia: "you do understand that if this comes out it going to cause problems within the family"

Me: "we'll make sure it doesn't come out until we both want it to when we older maybe wanting to settle down"

Amelia: "you love her that much?"

Me: "yeah bru like future kinda love" she smiled nodding

Amelia: "okay I won't tell" I chuckled

Me: "were you going to tell on me?"

Amelia: "no" we laughed "you already sleeping with her" I sighed rubbing my eyes she smacked the back of my head "she's our little sister's age Marcel!! How could you?!"

Me: "you think I don't feel bad? Amelia she's pushy and those eyes of hers bru those eyes I could never say no" she shook her head "it those eyes Amelia" we laughed she put her head on my shoulder "come let's go have breakfast" we got off the bed I wore my top

Amelia: "can't believe you doing uncle vuyani's little girl you got guts big bro!" I pushed her lightly

Me: "shut up" we laughed going down found the fam in the lounge Brianna on dad's lap busy playing with his face we greeted

Vuyani: "boy I hear you finally got a girlfriend it about time was starting to think you gay" Amelia laughed out loud I looked at Sihle she looked away

Mom: "leave my son alone vuyani, come the table is set" we followed her to the dinning room for breakfast I sat next to Sihle she smiled and squeezed my thigh grandma prayed we started eating over light conversation. I reached for her legs went up with my hand under her dress when I reached her pussy I ran my thumb on it over the panty she took in quick breath

Vuyani: "you okay baby girl"

Sihle: "yes daddy I'm fine" Amelia was a cross me she kicked me under the table I winced everyone looked at me

Me: "bloody mosquito" Sihle giggled

Sihle: "sorry" I shot Amelia a dead stare she shrugged her shoulders

After breakfast sihle was leaving it kinda made me sad I got in her room while she was getting ready locked the door she looked at me with a raised eyebrow and a cocky smile

Me: "I'll miss you" I walked closer to her held her waist "I'll miss you so bad I wish I could say don't leave" we kissed

Sihle: "wish I didn't have to leave" we kissed again I picked her up put her on the dresser "Marcel we cant do anything"

Me: "so I can kiss you"

Sihle: " no we going to get caught" I pushed her dress up

Me: "I'll miss you"

Sihle: " so will I" someone moved the door handle

Vuyani: "Nosihle princess why is the door locked" she pushed me off him

Sihle: "I didn't notice daddy"

Vuyani: "open now" I put her down

Sihle: "what we going to do?" She whispered I kissed her "Marcel"

Vuyani: "baby don't make me break down this door" she was about to start crying I went to the closet she opened the door "why did you lock?"

Sihle: "I didn't notice it was locked daddy"

Vuyani: "okay let's go" he took her bags they walked out I sat on the floor with a sigh I was seriously going to miss her I ran downstairs

Me: "uncle vuyani!!!" I ran outside they were getting in the car he stopped Sihle was already in

Vuyani: "what's up"

Me: "I'm coming with you I got 3 more weeks off school" he chuckled

Vuyani: "go pack then hurry" I nodded ran to my room started packing mom got in looking angry

Mom: "you just got home Marcel"

Me: "I'll be back"

Mom: "then you going to be leaving for school"

Me: "I got an amazing apartment there you can come spend time with me anytime"

Mom: "why now? You didn't tell anyone that you thinking of going to your uncle's house"

Me: "it just happened mama" I kissed her forehead "I love you I'll face time you"

Mom: "you not going"

Me: "why is that?"

Mom: "you need to spend to time with me" I smiled and pulled my suitcase while hanging my duffle bag on my shoulder

Me: "I love you I'll be home in 3 weeks" Amelia got in

Amelia: "son of a bitch!!!"

Mom: "excuse me, am I the bitch in this situation?" I laughed left them talking I found dad outside talking to uncle vuyani

Dad: "call" he kissed my head I put my bags in the boot

Me: "love you"

Dad: "love you"

Me: "can we go before mom comes out and pull me out of the car" they laughed I got in Sihle had a wide smile on her face I winked at her "can't stay away"

Sihle: "I'm so madly in love with you right now"

.

#Sphe

*

*

I pulled up a little bit further from Amelia's house and called her she didn't pick up after calling the 4th time she picked up panting

Amelia: "hello"

Me: "you took long"

Amelia: "yeah I'm swimming"

Me: "mhm what I'll do to see that wet sexy body" she giggled

Amelia: "what do you want Sphe"

Me: "see you, take you to lunch so we can talk"

Amelia: "I can't Sphe"

Me: "please I'm leaving tonight I want to see you"

Amelia: "you want to talk about us getting back together which won't happen Sphe, this doesn't change anything. You still cheated on me and made someone pregnant even worse you went back to her"

Me: "I'm already parked where we usually meet come tell me that in my face so I know you serious. I'll back off I promise"

Amelia: "okay" she dropped the call after almost an hour I saw her coming towards the car I smiled she was wearing navy ripped boyfriend jean some long sleeve tucked in top with heels carrying a bag her weave left lose she got in I drove off

Me: "you look beautiful and I thought you were just coming out to tell me to back off"

Amelia: "was bored figured I shouldn't say no to free meal was craving sea food anyway"

Me: "I sea" I drove off to ocean basket in comfortable silence as we listened to music when we got there we ordered

Amelia: "how was the ... uhm ..?"

Me: "as it was expected, how are you?"

Amelia: "as good as expected I guess"

Me: " how is varsity" she smiled brightly

Amelia: "amazing"

Me: "I've noticed" she looked at me confused "insta" she giggled

Amelia: "oh yeah that"

Me: "you've turned into an insta celebrity, too many followers" she shrugged her shoulders "I don't like you hanging out with boys"

Amelia: "okay"

Me: "it needs to stop"

Amelia: "and what are you to me"

Me: "your man"

Amelia: "don't you mean ex"

Me: "no I mean man you mine Amelia I don't know how many times I have to tell you that until you get it in that tiny pretty head of yours"

Amelia: "you not gonna bully me into getting back together with you" I smiled

Me: "it not bullying babe"

Amelia: "it is"

Me: "I don't know about you Amelia but according to me we together so I'll call whenever I want to I'll visit you whenever I need to and we will do things that lovers do since we are lovers"

Amelia: "Sphe stop"

Me: "you don't want me?" She shook her head

Amelia: "I don't you've hurt me so badly your sorries are not enough" I sat back exhaling as she quickly wiped a tear that dropped

Me: "what can I do to make it right?"

Amelia: "just let go of me please. I don't want us anymore I really don't"

Me: "but Amelia I love you"

Amelia: "so do I but it not enough"

Me: "you really not going to take me back?"

Amelia: "I love you Sphe but I can't" I nodded feeling defeated

Insert 8

^

^

#Sphe

*

*

I looked at her and I could tell she meant her words

Me: "I still love you"

Amelia: "I know I also love you just can't be with you" I nodded

Me: "I understand and I hope you understand that I'm not giving up on us on you I just want you to be happy and if being away from me for a little while is going to do you good then so be it but I'll come back Amelia you going to be mine" she smiled sweetly

Amelia: "if that's what you want" we finished lunch I took her back to her house

Me: "I'll see you around"

Amelia: "yeah" she got out I watched her walking until I couldn't see her anymore I drove off in a speed love can truly be fucked up I got at home my siblings were gone along with Snakho's family I found Snakho and mom in the lounge talking while eating I threw myself on the couch

Mom: "where you coming from? You know I hate it when you drive at night everyone has left"

Me: "I was around"

Snakho: "around where? I called you didn't answer"

Me: "just went for a drive met up with some guys from school nothing much. We can leave when you done eating"

Snakho: "load our bags in the car we done"

Mom: "and it late"

Me: "okay" I went upstairs got our bags put them in the boot I went to the kitchen drank some juice I felt someone hitting me from the back "the fuck!!" I turned

Mom: "language" I chuckled "we don't drink from the bottle, what's wrong with you boy?"

Me: "sorry thembalakhe. Where is dad anyway?"

Mom: "Nathan has soccer practice he took him there" I nodded "that woman needs you Sphe she needs you now more than ever" I sighed

Me: "I know mom"

Mom: "she's not as strong as she claims to be"

Me: "I'm here for her"

Mom: "don't go involving other girls in your relationship especially right now"

Me: "there's nobody else"

Mom: "you not being honest with me"

Me: "you calling me a liar mom"

Mom: "if the shoe fits" I shook my head "you are your father's son"

Me: "I care about Snakho I know what we just went through"

Mom: "good" she gave me two big bowls filled with baked goods I kissed her cheek "I love you son"

Me: "I know mom I love you too" she walked me out Snakho was already in the car I put the bowls in the back seat gave mom a hug got in the car drove off I hooted she waved

Snakho: "were you with her?"

Me: "who is her?"

Snakho: "Amelia? I heard you and Liam talking I know she was in your room the night we got here"

Me: "why you listening to my conversation with my brother"

Snakho: "were you with her Sphe?"

Me: "no I wasn't I haven't seen her since that night and I'm not planning to" she sighed

Snakho: "okay I can live with that"

Me: "Snakho"

Snakho: "we were happy and in love before her we will be again after her"

Me: "I see"

.

#Marcel

*

*

I got in the kitchen found aunty Sne feeding Aphe Sihle's baby sister while Simpiwe was sitting on the high chair looking at them

Me: "morning family" simpiwe just waved

Aphe: "Marcy!!"

Me: "that a girl's name Aphe"

Sne: "morning baby" she pulled my cheek I chuckled "you missed breakfast I saved you a plate it in the microwave"

Me: "thank you. What's wrong with this little guy why didn't he go to school?"

Sne: "he was coughing last night and you know how your uncle freaks outs so I have to take him to see the ped"

Me: "he does look a little blue" I sat down next to him

Simpiwe: "can I have some bacon Marcel?"

Sne: "no we need to have you checked out first"

Me: "just one won't hurt" I gave him

Sne: "it might"

Me: "I'm studying medicine I know these things" she laughed

Sne: "just one semester you think you know things" I chuckled

Me: "I totally do aunty Sne"

Sne: "I wonder. Sfungo will be back from the office soon he will keep you company he needed to attend to a few things"

Me: "he didn't have to I'm good in the entertainment room until his back"

Sne: "nonsense"

Me: "but I'm glad he will come back early I'd like to take a drive"

Sne: "see girls?! Zama told me you dating now"

Me: "God!" She laughed

Sne: "no babies Marcel put a rubber on it" I shook my head

Me: "can we not please I already had the talk with dada"

Simpiwe: "what's a rubber mommy"

Sne: "it another word for eraser" I laughed

Simpiwe: "rubber!"

Me: "yeah big boy"

Sne: "don't encouraged him Marcel"

Me: "I'm not"

Sne: "go tell Emily to get you ready Simpiwe" he jumped off the chair ran out "no running in the house you little rascal!!"

Simpiwe: "sorry mommy"

Me: "his always running around" Aphe spat out her oats

Sne: "Aphelele!!"

Aphe: "I'm full"

Sne: "then say so look at me now" her dress was dirty

Aphe: "sorry mommy" she giggled she looked so much like uncle vuyani even the skin colour while Sihle took her mom's skin colour Aphe looked like her brothers and her dad

Sne: "come on let's go find your nanny"

Aphe: "you going to leave me when going with Simpiwe?"

Sne: "yes you gonna stay with grandma"

Aphe: "no mommy I wanna go too"

Sne: "you going to get an injection if you go"

Aphe: "okay I'll stay and eat ice cream with grandma" I laughed

Sne: "I thought so" she carried her they walked out I finished eating put the plate and glass in the dishwasher I went upstairs to the room I was using took a bath got out put on black skinny jeans a white t-shirt and white Stan Smith I grabbed a black biker and wallet went downstairs met up with Sfundu on the second floor that's where his room was

Sfundu: "ready to hit some places" we shoulder hugged

Me: "thought you were coming back later"

Sfundu: "finished up early, let's go mom said you wanna take a drive for some reason sihle said I should pick her up instead of the driver" I wanted to laugh but I didn't she had told me in the morning when she left my room that she wants her friends to see me

Me: "cool I guess we should start there, doesn't her school come out in 20?"

Sfundu: "it does let's go" we walked downstairs got in his car he drove off "so how's SA? Man I miss that place I need to go visit the family that side"

Me: "SA is SA you know I don't really go out I'm not social"

Sfundu: "at least you dating now"

Me: "Jesus what is it with everyone?!" We laughed

Sfundu: "dude uncle Brian was worried he called almost everyone when he found out about Anastasia who the whole family is excited about meeting"

Me: "eyi"

Sfundu: "how is it that Sihle found out"

Me: "you know how she and Brianna are once they get bored she went through my phone" he chuckled

Sfundu: "she's too smart for her own good and now she's into tech and dad takes her to the office sometimes she spends all her time there with the tech guys"

Me: "she's following your footsteps"

Sfundu: "runs in the blood bru just like medicine runs in your blood"

Me: "true"

Sfundo: "was chatting to Amelia yesterday"

Me: "oh ja?"

Sfundo: "yeah she's also crazy about it"

Me: "like you said" he parked in the parking just as learners started coming out the gate we got out the car

Sfundo: "can you believe I had a thing with a high school learner?"

Me: "oh yeah" he chuckled

Sfundo: "didn't turn out well I gave her some she became all obsessed free advice stay away from kids" I shook my head chuckling Sihle came out with a group of girls her uniform was a little too short for my comfort and she looked too sexy and beautiful which made me really uncomfortable

Me: "she's growing too fast isn't she"

Sfundo: "it worse now that's she's lost all the weight and gotten taller" they came our way giggling

Sihle: "you really came!"

Sfundo: "I always come through for you little sis" they hugged he kissed her head she came to me we hugged

Sihle: "you look so hot I just wanna rip your clothes off" she whispered we pulled apart she introduced me to her friends they all giggled Sfundo just shook his head smiling and got in the car so did Sihle followed after us he drove off

Sihle: "they like you"

Sfundo: "your friends are forward been telling you to get new friends"

Sihle: "don't start Sfundo please. Can we go out for lunch please"

Me: "you got money"

Sihle: "my brothers do" Sfundo chuckled

Sfundo: "I don't maybe Marcel does" she got closer to the front seats and looked at me with those eyes of hers that made me weak and turned me on I cleared my throat

Me: "I guess lunch is on me" she sat back smiling I looked outside the window I was in deep with Sihle and she knew it sometimes it scared me of how in love I was with her

Sfundo: "don't you want to go change first"

Sihle: "you know mom won't let me go if we start at home"

Sfundo: "that's because it a school day"

Sihle: "I wanna go out"

Sfundo: "I'm taking you home Marcel and I got plans"

Sihle: "but Sfundo"

Sfundo: "no" I looked at her she was frowning we dropped her off then went out.

I waited and waited but she wasn't coming I took my phone called her

Sihle: "what do you want?!" I sighed

Me: "you mad at me"

Sihle: "you asking?"

Me: "please come I'm waiting for you"

Sihle: "no not tonight Marcel"

Me: "your room is close to your parents but I'll come if you don't come and I'll make you scream so loud they will wake up you will have lot of explaining to do"

Sihle: "I'm coming" I ended the call after a few minutes she got in locked the door "I'm still mad at you" I pulled her to bed

Me: "why"

Sihle: "I know Sfundo took you to see some girls"

Me: "I won't cheat on you I love you too much" I kissed her taking off her pjs she pushed me back

Sihle: "no not tonight"

Me: "I'm sorry Sihle but it was him I wanted us to go for lunch he didn't and I'm sorry yeah I met some girls but they not you I wasn't even interested I love you"

Sihle: "I love you too" I kissed her she pushed me "not tonight"

Me: "you said the same last night"

Sihle: "I'm tired"

Me: "what do you do at school Sihle? I saw how you look in your uniform and I know you. Are you fucking someone else?" She chuckled in disbelief and tried to get off the bed I pulled her back "well tell me! Is that why you were pushing for me to break your virginity so you can fuck someone else?"

Sihle: "you crazy Marcel I'm just tired" I nodded

Me: "okay let's sleep" I switched off the lights laid in bed looking away from her my brain was over working and my insecurities were starting to kick in

Sihle: "Marcel I'm really just tired please don't be upset"

Me: "sleep nosihle you have school in the morning"

Sihle: "can you hold me please" I turned

Me: "take your pjs off I want to feel your skin" she did I brought her close to me she laid her head on my chest we tangled our feet together I held her tightly kissed her head "I love you Nosihle it crazy how much I love you I'd do anything to be with you"

Sihle: "I feel the same way Marcel I promise you"

Me: "I'm gonna marry you one day and you going to have my children" she giggled

Sihle: "Mrs James"

Me: "yes my wife and the mother of my children" she snuggled even closer

Sihle: "we have to fight for our love first we both know it won't be easy"

Me: "we love each other and when we older they won't stand in our way"

Sihle: "I hope you right because I would die if they forced us to be apart"

Me: "I won't allow it we will run away if it comes to it"

Sihle: "yes" I moved back cupped her face

Me: "I love you" I kissed her deeply she moaned in my mouth

.

#Amelia

*

*

Lindela: "you looked better in shorts" I looked at myself in the mirror

Tracy: "I agree with her" I was wearing a short tight denim dress

Me: "you think?"

Them: "totally" I was back in my place school was open it was the first weekend of the second semester so we were going out

Tracy: "is your brother okay? He hasn't been answering my calls"

Me: "I've been telling you to forget about him Tracy"

Tracy: "is he seeing someone"

Me: "not that I'm aware of" I took the lose bum shorts wore them with a matching lace bra top and a boyfriend blazer with heels

Lindela: "perfect"

Tracy: "lose the blazer it hot" I took it off

Lindela: "let's go wandile won't stop calling they already there" I grabbed my bag we left got in Tracy's car she drove off her phone rang she looked at it and canceled it

Tracy: "I keep hoping Marcel will call" I rolled my eyes I wanted to tell her but it wasn't my story to tell

Lindela: "please tell me you not going to spend the night talking about Marcel not calling you"

Tracy: "you wouldn't understand"

Lindela: "you need to sleep with someone new soon as in yesterday" we laughed "I need to meet this Marcel that has got you going all crazy"

Tracy: "he looks just like Amelia"

Lindela: "well damn if that's the case I don't blame you sweetie" I chuckled

Me: "you two are stupid and can we stop talking about my brother please" we got to the restaurant found the boys already having some beers

Lizwi: "you always late" we all hugged and settled down

Tracy: "maybe if you two stopped being on time things would be better"

Lizwi: "that's so stupid" he waved over a waiter we ordered

Me: "I need a drink asap"

Wandile: "you okay?"

Me: "yeah I'm well just tired" he nodded my phone rang I took it out of my bag it was dad "dada"

Dada: "hi baby girl"

Me: "you okay dada?"

Dad: "yeah just checking on you angel, who you out with?" I sighed

Me: "dada I thought mama said you should check on my whereabouts if there's something wrong" he chuckled

Dad: "I'm allowed to check on you Amelia you my daughter. So who are you out with? Are you also dating now?"

Me: "I'm with Tracy and some friends and no I'm not dating"

Dad: "you being honest?"

Me: "yes dada I'm being honest"

Dad: "okay good"

Me: "dada what's wrong?"

Dad: "when last did you speak to your mother?"

Me: "morning, why?"

Dad: "did she sound okay?"

Me: "are you two fighting? Should I come home?" He huffed in frustration

Dad: "will you please? She's not talking to me and I didn't do anything"

Me: "since when?"

Dad: "last night but I only noticed this morning I thought she was just moody again"

Me: "maybe I should call her first if she's being weird I'll catch a flight in the morning"

Dad: "okay thanks"

Me: "I'll talk to her dada don't stress, I love you"

Dad: "I love you too angle wish you and your brother were home even Brianna won't talk to me"

Me: "why is she not talking to you?"

Dad: "she's on her periods and you know she hates everyone" I laughed

Me: "must be tough for you"

Dad: "it is"

Me: "let me go dada"

Dad: "bye angel" I dropped the call and called mom

Mom: "Amelia"

Me: "mom are you crying? What did dad do?"

Mom: "I'm not crying" she sniffed

Me: "mom"

Mom: "he made me pregnant Amelia!! We agreed that we were done and he tricks me" she let out a loud sob

Me: "oh mom"

Dada: "you pregnant?" He asked in the background "ma'Mnguni?"

Mom: "leave me alone James" I ended the call laughing it was going to be long 9 months for dada I went back to my friends our food and drinks had arrived

Lizwi: "everything okay?"

Me: "yeah"

Lindela: "you don't look so good" I laughed shaking my head

Me: "I'm good just that mom is pregnant and Shea making dad suffer"

Lizwi: "your mother is fire if she was mine I'd make sure she's always pregnant" they laughed

Me: "shut up" he winked

Lizwi: "now you on the other hand" he pulled his bottom lip between his teeth and made a hand gesture of my butt with his eyes closed Tracy pushed him as they all laughed

Tracy: "show some respect" we finished eating and left for the club we found a table ordered our alcohol we settled down and started drinking a little while later my song started playing I screamed and jumped a little I pulled Tracy's hand to the dance floor we were dancing to a different song now when someone stood behind me his arm snaked around my waist I caught his scent before he spoke he directed my body to move along with his Tracy was staring at us with her eyes wide before she walked away he ran his cold tongue down my neck I shivered he kissed my neck biting it a little I tilted my head giving him more space he moved to another spot he moved me in a speed to face him he was dancing like his in a bedroom in bed and I'm naked under him as clueless as I was i was following his lead I know I should be pulling back but I don't want to actually I can't it like his dominating me somewhere

Sphe: "you smell so good" he bit my ear groaning a little

Me: "Sphe"

Sphe: "you basically naked I'm taking you home"

Me: "I just got here like few hours back"

Sphe; "I know and it took everything in me to let you have fun looking like that but once you started dancing baby I couldn't handle it" he smashed his lips on mine we kissed hard deeply I couldn't stop my moans when we pulled apart we stopped dancing he took my hand walking I followed him to my table

Me: "uhm I'm leaving I'll see you guys" they all looked at me shocked as I take my bag

Sphe: "Tracy" she sighed

Tracy: "stop hurting her Sphe"

Sphe: "of course" he smiled and put his hand on my waist urging me to move so I did "I don't like those boys"

Me: "they my friends"

Sphe: "I guess you need new friends" I stopped moving "go Amelia" I did

Me: "you can't tell me what to do you not my father" he chuckled and kissed my cheek

Sphe: "you cute" I looked at him

Me: "don't treat me like that Sphe please" someone lifted me up and span me around before putting me down I turned to face them and it was Liam he had a wide smug grin

Liam: "miss Amelia James!" I smiled we hugged Sphe pulled me back

Sphe: "okay enough touching" Liam laughed shaking his head

Liam: "so territorial little brother"

Sphe: "we leaving"

Liam: "so early"

Sphe: "yeah she's tired"

Liam: "yeah right" he laughed they hugged Sphe said his goodbyes to the others we left going to my apartment

Sphe: "it been awhile miss James"

Me: "you've been calling everyday"

Sphe: "you haven't been answering"

Me: "I know" he took my hand put it on his thigh

Sphe: "well I've really missed you babe" the rest of the ride was silence we got there went straight to the bedroom

Me: "I'll take a quick shower first"

Sphe: "sure" I went to the bathroom took a quick shower got in my pjs went to bed he pulled me to him we cuddled his skin felt so soft and hot

Me: "I'm glad you here" and I really was

Sphe: "I love you baby" we kissed

.

I was woken up by kisses all over my face I opened my eyes found Sphe on top of me

Me: "you sweaty"

Sphe: "just came back from a jog"

Me: "oh" he removed his t-shirt "don't you want to bath?" He laughed

Sphe: "do I smell baby?"

Me: "well you did just came back from jogging"

Sphe: "join me"

Me: "you do realize that we not together right?"

Sphe: "I'm saying shower with me woman not marry me" he got off the bed and picked me up threw me over his shoulder

Me: "Sphe put me down"

Sphe: "we gonna shower" we got in the bathroom

Me: "I'm not gonna get naked in front of you" he laughed so hard after putting me down I ended up smiling

Sphe: "baby I've seen parts of you that you would need a mirror to see I've done things to you that would make your dada kill me" he huffed "I'm not gonna get naked in front of you" he mimicked my voice and started taking off my pjs until I was naked "perfect" I rolled my eyes got in the shower after showering I was lotioning when he stood behind me I could feel his erection on my ass I looked at him on the mirror our eyes met

Me: "Sphe"

Sphe: "when?"

Me: "we not even together"

Sphe: "that song is getting old and you won't let us be" I shook my head stood straight he held my waist holding me in place "we love each other Amelia badly"

Me: "it not enough"

Sphe: "you won't let it"

Me: "I deserve more I need more"

Sphe: "I'll give it to you I'll be all that you deserve" he kissed my neck I moaned that was my weak spot my neck and behind my ear "let me make you a woman Vuyolwethu" I pushed him and faced him nodding softly

Me: "just don't make me feel pain" he dropped my towel and picked me up walked over to the bed he got on top of me "do you have a condom?"

Sphe: "you on injection"

Me: "I don't know who've been with" he sighed

Sphe: "we tested together"

Me: "and we broke up for months besides you were cheating"

Sphe: "Amelia come on"

Me: "if you don't have it forget it"

Sphe: "I have some in my car" he got off the bed

Me: "why do you have condom Sphe?"

Sphe: "why would I have condoms Amelia? You broke up with me remember?" He walked out and came back just as I was about to get off the bed "actually no Amelia" he walked to me with purpose and kissed me hard with my hands pinned above my head when he pulled back I could feel that my lips were swollen "fuck Amelia! I fucking love you mf2 like I've loved before but it was never this deep I messed up

I get it I messed big time, but when will you stop punishing me? I'm sorry bra I'm really sorry but you need to stop now please it enough" his voice broke " I don't know if I can hold on anymore I'm getting tired" he wiped his face "love shouldn't be this hard it shouldn't hurt like this it just shouldn't you making me suffer please stop"

Me: "I don't want to hurt you Sphe I love you so much I would never want to hurt just that you hurt me I don't want that happened again"

Sphe: "it won't I've learned my lesson"

Me: "Sphe"

Sphe: "one last chance"

Me: "one last chance" he kissed me

Sphe: "thank you" we kissed "now I'll make love to you" he kissed me going down my jawline to my neck down until he got to my breasts "I love you ma'James" I was about to reply when he took in my breast I let out a moan held his head "your face is priceless even more when you receiving pleasure" he moved to another sucking on it hard lightly biting my nipple I called his name he knew I didn't like it when he played with my breasts a lot yeah sure I enjoyed but last thing I needed was my breasts losing it shape he came back to my face we kissed his hands were all over my body after awhile he went down leaving soft kisses all over my body when he got to my nuna he sniffed and groaned "fuck I missed my baby" he looked at me with a raised eyebrow "you waxed"

Me: "yesterday"

Sphe: "lucky me" I chuckled my chuckle turned into moan when he started taking me deep into muff town something was different the way his hands were grabbing on my ass and his tongue felt longer in my nuna it was intense amazing I couldn't stop moaning it didn't take long for his tongue to be replaced by his two fingers I went a little louder he stopped moving them I opened my eyes he was looking at me with a grin on his face "to think you gonna have something four times bigger in you soon and you already screaming" I covered my face with my hands

Me: "stop" I said softly he pressed his tongue on my clit before sucking it in his fingers began moving in circles "God" I threw my head back it didn't take long for my insides to tighten I came hard he licked me up cleaning me up and came up I held his face kissed him trying to get us to roll over he shook his head and pulled back

Sphe: "it all about you right now" I nodded we kissed more I don't know when he took his shorts off but he was already naked and his dick was knocking on my nuna "it going to hurt Amelia I'm not gonna lie but only for this round I won't go all in I'll keep going deeper deeper every time we do it until you get used to it"

Me: "just do it" he chuckled

Sphe: "not very romantic ms James"

Me: "you didn't really make this romantic Mntungwa"

Sphe: "we'll have a candle light dinner" he kissed me started rubbing his dick on my nuna it felt so good I kept on moaning but when I felt him enter I started to tense up "relax my love it gonna hurt more if you tense" I relaxed my body he kissed my neck sucking and biting on it as he kept going in I was not ready for the pain that came as he went through the barrier I screamed and grabbed the sheet he stopped moving "I'm sorry but it over" he kissed my eyes "you so beautiful Amelia and I'm going to marry you we will have beautiful children our home will be warm and filled with love"

Me: "promise"

Sphe: "I promise baby I'll give you that and nothing and no one is going to stop me I'll slay dragons swim through lava"

Me: "you love me?"

Sphe: "truly and unconditionally" we kissed

Insert 09

^

^

#Sphe

*

*

I watched her sleeping she was snoring softly her face was a sight for sore eyes, I removed her weave from her face and gave her a soft peck before getting off the bed it was Sunday night I needed to leave go back to my place but I didn't want to leave her alone I had lost her for months now I finally had her back and I wasn't letting go no matter what. I went to the bathroom took a quick shower got out lotioned put on my joggers a sweater and sneakers then went to the kitchen started on dinner I'm not a great cook but I can cook a mean pap so I defrost some steak and wors, I put the pap on the stove while it was cooking I put the meat on the griller I went to the lounge opened the tv changing the channel to a music channel then went back to the kitchen when everything was almost done I made chakalaka I finished cooking went to the bedroom I got on the bed under the cover opened her legs she was still naked she stirred a little I kissed her pussy before sucking on her clit she woke up gasping

Amelia: "baby"

Me: "mhm"

Amelia: "Aaah spheee" she pushed my head to go deeper as I penetrated her with my tongue I went in circles twisting my tongue while my thumb was rubbing on her clit it didn't take long for her to come I cleaned her up with my tongue by that time my dick was throbbing I went up we kissed she held my neck deepening the kiss and started grinding on me I pulled back

Me: "I made dinner come eat" she closed her eyes shaking her head

Amelia: "I. want. you" it came out as a whisper it was as if she's running out of breath

Me: "the food is gonna get cold"

Amelia: "ple.... ase ... Sphe" I moved back her body shaking

Me: "Amelia open your eyes baby let me see you" she opened them and they were all small and red she looked fucking gorgeous when horny it barely got to this point

Amelia: "Sphe don't make me beg" I smiled and took off my sweater she breathed out loudly and ran her hand down my packs I took off my joggers along with my boyleg I groaned when she held my dick squeezing it

Me: "fuck baby" she directed it to her pussy I entered her slowly throwing my head back at the feeling of her walls expanding and the tightness and warmth of her.

Amelia: "can't believe you cooked and it actually tastes nice" I chuckled we were eating in front of the tv it was decided that I'll leave early in the morning

Me: "that's because you have no faith whatsoever when it comes to my kitchen skills" she giggled sweetly "what will you feed me and our kids when we get married?" She also couldn't cook

Amelia: "what are maids for?"

Me: "your mother cooks for your father"

Amelia: "I'll learn Sphe I'll take cooking classes. Mom is pregnant"

Me: "your parents are still having sex?!!" She laughed loudly shaking her head

Amelia: "my parents are young and yes they still having sex lot of sex"

Me: "I wanna be your dad when I grow up" she pushed me lightly

Amelia: "oh yeah"

Me: "I love you" she giggled shaking her head

Amelia: "idiot" she gave me a soft peck after few minutes of silence I looked at her she was playing with her food I held her chin making her look at me

Me: "what's wrong?" She sighed

Amelia: "are you still with Snakho?" I really needed to break up with Snakho

Me: "no I'm not. Not anymore"

Amelia: "there's no need to lie"

Me: "I'll never cheat on you baby I've learnt my lesson just trust me please. Okay baby?"

Amelia: "okay I trust you" we kissed

Me: "thank you"

.

I woke up the following with Amelia wrapped and pressed against me I kissed her forehead then carefully got out of bed I took a shower got dressed I took my phone which had been off since we came back from the club along with my wallet and car keys I went over to the bed woke her up she opened her eyes and blinked rapidly before staring at me I smiled

Me: "I'll see you Friday afternoon"

Amelia: "okay baby I love you"

Me: "I love you" I kissed her shortly "I'll miss you"

Amelia: "call me when you get to your place"

Me: "won't you miss me?" She giggled

Amelia: "I'll miss you Sphe"

Me: "come lock the door"

Amelia: "your keys are in that drawer" I couldn't help the smile that came on my face

Me: "you giving me my keys back?" She nodded I kissed her hard "thank you" she was giggling

Amelia: "go! Before you run late"

Me: "I love you Vuyolwam" she smiled nodding I took the keys and left. I was speeding the whole way to Witbank when I got there I went straight to my room I found Snakho sleeping I just felt defeated I let out a sigh got dressed in my work clothes I took my back pack when I was about to walk out the bedroom she woke up

Snakho: "hi"

Me: "hey, when did you get here?"

Snakho; "last night I was worried your phone has been off since Friday night"

Me: "are you working today?" She shook her head "I'll see you later don't cook I'm taking you out"

Snakho: "were you with her?" I shook my head kissed her forehead

Me: "see you later" I left for work.

I sat opposite her at the restaurant I watched her giggling sweetly as she told me about the conversation she had to Nathan when mom had called her during the day I didn't know how to break up with her but I knew I had to it was the only way I could get to keep Amelia in my life and I cares about Snakho she deserved to be with someone who will love her like I love Amelia unfortunately I wasn't that guy for her we finished dinner over light conversation we were just having drinks now I held her hands on the table she looked at me with a smile

Me: "I love you"

Snakho: "I know honey I love you more"

Me: "we've been through so much together I've been such an ass whole to you but you still stayed and I really appreciate you Snakho but I think we need to be honest with each other"

Snakho: "what do you mean?"

Me: "it not the same anymore Snakho"

Snakho: "of course it not we just lost a baby"

Me: "even before the baby"

Snakho: "that's because you were cheating on me"

Me: "I care about you Snakho I really do and I think you deserve someone who will not hurt you who will put you first bec.."

Snakho: "and that's not you right? Because you got someone else now. Did you go running back to Amelia?"

Me: "this isn't about Amelia"

Snakho: "the hell it not!!" People looked at us

Me: "keep it down"

Snakho: "we just lost our baby Sphe and you dumping me it hasn't even been a month"

Me: "you deserve to be happy Snakho to be with someone who is crazy in love with you"

Snakho: "don't tell me what I deserve. I won't beg you Sphe but when she hurts you don't come running to me" she stood up

Me: "sit please we don't have to enemies" she walked away I called the waiter asked for our bill I paid and walked out I found her standing next to my car I unlocked it she got in so did I "Snakho"

Snakho: "just drive please. Just take me back to my place" her voice was braking

Me: "I'm sorry Snakho I'm really sorry" she sniffed I looked at her she was crying

Snakho: "is it her? You went back to Amelia?"

Me: "Snakho don't"

Snakho: "please I just want to know"

Me: "yes it her we fixed things this weekend I'm sorry Snakho"

Snakho: "is it because she's more pretty or did I do something wrong?"

Me: "it has nothing to do with you I just fell deeply for her"

Snakho: "you don't have to break up with me you can keep us both Sphe she's in Jhb anyway I'm okay with it" I knew she might say this as much as I could keep them both Amelia would never understand and she would leave me

Me: "you deserve more Snakho please don't do this"

Snakho: "I want you Sphe what we have is good please"

Me: "Snakho don't do this" her phone rang she took it

Snakho: "mah" she sniffed "no I'm not crying I'm in a car Sphe is taking me to my flat he broke up with me mah" I stared at her in disbelief as she let out a loud sob as she put her phone in her bag mine started ringing I sighed and answered

Me: "mom"

Mom: "are you out of you crazy mind Sphe Khumalo?"

Me: "mom please"

Mom: "fix it I'll call her later she better not be crying"

Me: "mom please stay out of it"

Mom: "you not breaking up with that girl after everything you put her through" she dropped the call

Me: "did you have to do that Snakho"

Snakho: "she asked"

Me: "so you would rather be my side chick? You will understand when I spend all my weekends in Jhb when I answer her calls in front you telling her I love her at the end of our conversation or when you can't come over without calling me because she might be at my house" she didn't say anything "I thought so" I drove the rest of the way in silence she kept sniffing when I parked in the parking lot at her flat

Snakho: "I'll understand" I stared at her in disbelief

Me: "Snakho"

Snakho: "I'll take you as you come I love you Sphe and I know she will be out of your system soon" I pressed my forehead on the wheel

Me: "I'm sorry Snakho but I can't cheat on her I just can't it will break her"

Snakho: "Sphe" she let out a muffled sob "this is me Sphe! You talking to me like that Sphe?"

Me: "I'm sorry" I really couldn't cheat on Amelia it would kill her and she would definitely leave me this time around I loved her too much

.

#Amelia

*

*

I rolled over laughing so I can lay on my stomach I was on the phone with Marcel

Me: "I can't believe she just showed up there"

Marcel: "don't you girls talk? Why didn't you tell her I'm seeing someone?"

Me: "wasn't my place to say anything"

Marcel: "but she's your friend Amelia"

Me: "and she's crazy in love with you dude she's been like that for years"

Marcel: "I don't even know when she's leaving"

Me: "chase her out of your apartment if you don't want her there"

Marcel: "you know I can't do that I'm not rude"

Me: "where is she now?"

Marcel: "in the kitchen making us a snack"

Me: "at least Sihle wasn't there" he chuckled

Marcel: "yeah that would be crazy Sihle was going to freak out"

Me: "plus she's a little drama queen"

Marcel: "tell me about it"

Me: "you two are good?" He sighed

Marcel: "the distance is driving me crazy and my insecurities are not making things better"

Me: "I'm sorry bro"

Marcel: "it cool. I have to go Tracy is done. I love you sis"

Me: "I love you too" I dropped the call and got off the bed I went to the lounge sat on his lap he was concentrating on the soccer game that was playing "baby"

Sphe: "yes my love"

Me: "look at me"

Sphe: "wait the game is almost finish we will go now" it was September holidays I didn't go home I was spending them at Sphe's house

Me: "baby maan"

Sphe: "don't whine Amelia you too old" I got off him but he pulled me back we watched soccer for about 20 minutes in silence then it finished "I'm all yours my love"

Me: "mxm" he chuckled

Sphe: "don't be upset"

Me: "it always soccer with you let's go" he kissed me we kissed for the longest time he kept moving me until I was straddling him he went down until he was laying on the couch with me on top of him I pulled back "ha.a Sphe no sex you said you taking me out" he sat up laughing

Sphe: "okay let's go"

Me: "I'm gonna go out on my shoes"

Sphe: "bring me my white jays and black jacket" I nodded went to his room I wore my white red bottom ankle boot took his things

Me: "here I'm gonna go powder my face" I went to the bathroom fixed up my make up put on lipstick I took my bag went out found him drinking water in the kitchen "I'm done let's go" I took the car keys I loved his Porsche

Sphe: "you driving?" I nodded "with those heels? Baby I don't wanna die"

Me: "I've driven in heels before don't be a baby baby"

Sphe: "that car is fast" I walked out went to the garage I got in the driver's seat reversed out he was standing by the door watching me with a smirk on his face I turned then hooted he quickly locked the door and came to the car I drove off "it looks good on you"

Me: "I know right! I think I want it for my 18th birthday instead of something small"

Sphe: "you should get it" he brushed my thigh

Me: "you just can't keep your hands to yourself"

Sphe: "have you seen yourself? Don't blame me" I played music he switched it off "focus on the road"

Me: "the fuck?! Just because I don't have my license it doesn't mean I don't know how to drive I've been driving since I turned 16" I switched it back on

Sphe: "I just don't want to die without making you pregnant" I laughed

Me: "you want me to have your children?"

Sphe: "fuck yeah woman" he kissed my cheek "I'll marry you first then I'll get you pregnant you will give me 8 children"

Me: "you crazy! Ain't no way I'm giving birth to 8 children my poor pussy will not suffer like that" he laughed loudly

Sphe: "I want 8 children" I shook my head

Me: "two is good"

Sphe: "never! At least 5"

Me: "we shall see my love" we got to highveld mall I parked by the restaurant side we got off the car he held my hand

Sphe: "we such goals though"

Me: "hhu?"

Sphe: "I mean look at us" I just giggled put my head on his shoulder "baxters or news cafe?"

Me: "movie first" we went down to the cinema watched a movie first when it was finished we went up to News Cafe had dinner and drinks good music was playing our conversation was light and playful after my 4th glass of champagne I needed the loo so I went to the toilet did my thing went to wash my hands some ladies came to the sinks laughing and talking amongst themselves I brought my eyes up and saw Snakho she had stopped laughing I cleared my throat

Snakho: "this is the child that is with Sphe" they all looked at me all 4 of them I tried going out one of them blocked my way

Me: "please I don't want trouble, can I just go pass?"

Snakho: "what you doing here?"

Me: "can I go pass please?" She walked closer to me I backed up "please"

Snakho: "know Sphe and I were happy before you sank your claws into him" I sighed

Me: "Snakho I didn't steal Sphe from you I didn't know he was seeing you when we got together now can I please just go past please"

Snakho: "let her go pass" the girl moved I literally ran out I bumped into Sphe by the door

Sphe: "hey hey what's wrong?" He held me tightly Snakho and her friends walked out laughing but they stopped when they saw Sphe "what did you do Snakho?"

Snakho: "what would I do to you barbie doll Sphe" they walked away Sphe grabbed snakho's arm roughly "I'll tell Yammy you hurt me Sphe" he let go of her arm

Sphe: "what did you do to her?"

Me: "it nothing I'm fine just a little freaked out they wouldn't let me go"

Sphe: "Snakho"

Snakho: "mxm" they walked away

Sphe: "I'm sorry baby"

Me: "it fine. Kiss me" he cupped my face we kissed

Sphe: "come let's go home" I liked that he called his place our home and my place as well

Me: "no we were not done having fun let's go get drunk" he laughed loudly and kissed we walked back to News I ordered another bottle

Sphe: "you are definitely not driving my car" I giggled rolling my eyes

Me: "your mom and Snakho are close?" He nodded looking uncomfortable I sighed "so she already hates me without even meeting me"

Sphe: "just because she loves Snakho it doesn't mean she will hate you my mother is not like she won't hate you"

Me: "but she will always compare me to Snakho and she will always prefer her"

Sphe: "it doesn't matter you mine not hers and I'll never put you in a situation where you feel uncomfortable"

Me: "okay baby" I moved from my seat went to sit next to him instead of across I kissed him

Sphe: "I think it time I introduced you to my parents"

Me: "not just yet"

Sphe: "okay"

.

#Marcel

*

*

I stared at her she was stuffing her face with ice cream she was eating a lot that was something I had noticed since she came here yesterday. I couldn't wait for our parents to leave so I can spend sometime with her it was December our parents were going to their yearly couples retreat for two weeks which means I had two weeks with Sihle because when our parents come back she was going back home with her's for Christmas

Sne: "baby you going to catch a cold"

Sihle: "no I won't"

Mom: "you can't seem to stay away from ice cream Sihle" mom and aunty Sne looked at each other aunty Sne's eyes popped out mom shook her head it was like they having a silent conversation

Vuyani: "let my child be eat your ice cream baby"

Mbali: "for a doctor you really amaze me sometimes vuyani" everyone laughed we were all in the lounge after dinner waiting for uncle Mpilo and Ethan and their wives

Siya: "I even forget he was a doctor"

Sne: "leave my husband alone"

Vuyani: "tell them baby" I looked at Sihle she caught me staring and winked at me I chuckled looking down

Mom: "what you laughing at Marcel"

Me: "mom no"

Mom: "Brian"

Siya: "she's going to start crying again" mom was over emotional she was 7 months pregnant another princess to turn dad even more soft

Brian: "Marcel tell your mother why you laughing" Sihle and Brianna giggled

Me: "I'm just chatting to my friends"

Siya: "when are we meeting your girlfriend Marcel"

Me: "never. We broke up"

Dad: "what?! Why?"

Mom: "are you okay?"

Me: "I'm fine don't fuss and can we move on from this conversation"

Dad: "Marcel you know you can talk to me right?"

Me: "yes but I don't want to"

Vuyani: "leave the kid alone he has brothers to talk to about these things"

Me: "thank you uncle vuyani" couple of voices came towards the lounge and it was the rest of the couples greetings went around the lounge we walked them out dad pulled me to the side

Dad: "look after your little sisters"

Me: "okay" we hugged I went to hug mom the baby kicked I laughed she kicked every time I hugged or even touched mom's stomach "she really likes me"

Mom: "of course you her big brother" I kissed her forehead

Me: "I love you"

Mom: "I love you baby"

Dad: "come ma'Mnguni" he took her hand they left I went in the house locked the door set up the alarm the girls were already upstairs I ran up to my room found Sihle already in bed she was eating leftover pork chops

Me: "you know I don't like food in my room"

Sihle: "I was really craving them" I took my clothes off went to bed she snuggled close to me

Me: "go brush your teeth and wash your hands"

Sihle: "do I have to Marcel? I'm so lazy"

Me: "go Sihle" she got off the bed went to the bathroom mumbling bullshit I just laughed she came back I pulled her to me "I've missed you baby" I had last seen her two months ago

Sihle: "you've missed sleeping with me"

Me: "that's hurtful nosihle you more than just sex you know that"

Sihle: "I'm joking" she kissed me I got on top of her she opened her legs

.

I was woken up by an awful sound I went to the bathroom found Sihle throwing up I held her braids until she finished

Me: "come let's brush your teeth" she went to the sink I flushed the toilet I sat on top of the bathtub "are you okay baby?"

Sihle: "it been happening for awhile now"

Me: "the throwing up?" She nodded tears started running down her face I stood up quickly and held her she just cried "talk to me baby"

Sihle: "I think I'm pregnant Marcel"

Me: "how? I mean the pills. Haven't you been going to get them?"

Sihle: "there was a time where I would forget but I didn't think it would be a big deal because we were not together. I don't know Marcel" I let go of her went out the bathroom I sat on the edge of my bed I buried my face on my hand she sat next to me "what are we going to do Marcel?" I shook my head

Me: "I don't know Sihle, what I know is we dead well I'm dead uncle vuyani will kill me and dad will let him"

Sihle: "I can have an abortion" I looked at her

Me: "don't even think about that Nosihle I will kill you myself"

Sihle: "okay, so what do we do?"

Me: "go get ready we going to see a doctor first"

Sihle: "can I eat first?" I couldn't help but laugh I kissed the side of her head

Me: "I'll take you to breakfast after we've seen the doctor"

Sihle: "okay I'll go get ready" she gave me a soft peck and left my room I went to bath got out lotioned got dressed in caramel chino shorts a white t-shirt and white vans I brushed my fade put on my eye lenses I took my wallet, phone and car keys went out. I found Sihle in her room getting dressed her boobs were bigger and the nipples darker

Me: "finish up"

Sihle: "please make me sandwich while I finish up"

Me: "okay but hurry" I went to the kid found my sisters having cereal "morning"

Amelia: "you dressed up early"

Me: "granny is still asleep?"

Brianna: "yeah. Where you going to?"

Me: "taking Sihle to see a doctor she's not feeling well"

Brianna: "she didn't tell me she was sick" I shrugged my shoulders started making her cheese and ham sandwich

Amelia: "what's wrong with her?"

Me: "I think it that ice cream she's been eating"

Brianna: "I'm gonna call mama"

Me: "no!" They looked at me confused

Brianna: "why not?"

Me: "just let me take her to the doctor first hear what he says if it serious. Can we not worry our parents over a cold? And dada will be furious we all know he wants mama to relax before the baby comes"

Brianna: "I guess"

Amelia: "you know his right" Sihle came in looking so beautiful in a white sun dress

Sihle: "I'm done"

Brianna: "you look so pretty sis" Sihle giggled

Amelia: "mhm"

Me: "let's go" I walked out she followed me we got in my car I gave her the sandwich

Sihle: "thank you" I drove off we got to the doctor had to wait since we didn't have an appointment finally it was our turn she told the doctor what was happening he did the test it came back positive we did an ultrasound I looked at the tiny blip on the screen in disbelief she was 11 weeks I just knew I was fucked things will never be the same

Insert 10

^

^

#Marcel

*

*

We left the doctor's office went to buy her vitamins then went to have breakfast at Wimpy it was just silence we were both lost in our own thoughts I knew I was going to get blamed for this forget that she was the one who pushed for us to have sex forget that she was the one who didn't take her pills the fact that I'm the guy and I'm older meant I'm to blame we finished eating I called the waiter over to ask for a bill

Sihle: "I want waffle with ice cream first" she ordered her waffle I got another cup of coffee "do you hate me? I know this is my fault"

Me: "I couldn't hate you even if I wanted to Nosihle I love you too much"

Sihle: "I'm sorry Marcel" I shook my head

Me: "it not your fault I shouldn't have slept you"

Sihle: "you regret it" her tears dropped I sighed

Me: "that's not what I mean and you know that" she fanned her face with her hands "can you stop Sihle" I half shouted she let out a soft sob I threw my hands in the air "I'm sorry"

Sihle: "you going to leave me now I just know"

Me: "clearly you don't know me Sihle if you think that little of me now get up we going home I need to think"

Sihle: "my waffle Marcel"

Me: "I'll make them for you at home" I stood up but she didn't move "nosihle"

Sihle: "I'll call an uber"

Me; "okay" her big eyes widened I wasn't about to beg her right now my mind was fucked up as it is

Sihle: "fine!" I took out my wallet "keep your money Marcel I'm not broke" I raised my eyebrow

Me: "whatever" I left I got in my car drove off in a speed I found myself outside the gate at Tracy's home I called her

Tracy: "hey baby"

Me: "I'm at the gate, can you open for me?"

Tracy: "okay" I hung up as the gate opened I drove in when I parked she was already waiting by the door in bum shorts and a sport bra I got off the car she jumped on me giggling I held her ass we kissed "this is a lovely surprise baby"

Me: "I kinda missed you"

Tracy: "come in" I put her down we walked in "mom and dad are out swimming, do you want something to drink before we go up?"

Me: "bottle of water" we walked to the kitchen got my water her mom got in just as we were going up we exchanged greetings then went up we laid on the bed she took off her shorts "Tracy can we not?"

Tracy: "what do you mean?"

Me: "I'm not here for sex come closer I wanna cuddle and sleep" she raised her eyebrow and got closer to me we held each other I kissed her head she sighed

Tracy: "what's wrong Marcel?"

Me: "I fucked Tracy I really messed up my parents will never forgive me I ruined our family"

Tracy: "what did you do?"

Me: "let's leave it"

Tracy: "baby talk to me"

Me: "later. I want to sleep"

Tracy: "okay whatever you need"

I spent the whole day with Tracy just sleeping and watching tv and eating. It was late at night when I got home the girls were watching tv with granny

Sihle: "nxa" she stood up and walked upstairs bumping me on purpose

Me: "ouch" I whispered

Granny: "what was that about?"

Amelia: "she has her periods"

Me: "goodnight"

Granny: "not so fast Marcel. Where have you been?" I chuckled

Me: "been around grams goodnight" Brianna giggled as I went up I knocked in Sihle's room I felt really bad over leaving her at Wimpy I kept knocking she wouldn't open I went to my room took a bath got in my pj bottom I took my phone called her but it rang unanswered for five times I called Amelia

Amelia: "what up"

Me: "come knock on sihle's door she won't open for me"

Amelia: "what did you do? she was crying the whole day"

Me: "she pissed me off I left her at the restaurant spent the day with Tracy" she laughed

Amelia: "you such an ass whole"

Me: "I feel bad please help me"

Amelia: "okay come"

Me: "thanks" I dropped the call went out she met me by the door she knocked Sihle didn't open

Amelia: "Sihle can we talk?" The door opened when she saw me she tried closing it but I held it and got in I locked it she stood by the door with her hands crossed over her chest

Me: "I'm sorry"

Sihle: "voestek" I nodded

Me: "I shouldn't have left you there I don't know what I was thinking"

Sihle: "I saw your car parked at Tracy's yard. Did you fuck her?" I shook my head

Me: "I don't know what you talking about"

Sihle: "I'm not stupid Marcel don't treat me like I'm stupid!!" I nodded

Me: "I'm sorry baby" I walked to her she shook her head "I love you Nosihle just you nobody else you own my heart you've owned it for years I love you baby I'm sorry I left you there but please don't be upset it not good for our daughter"

Sihle: "daughter? You want a girl?"

Me: "yes she will look exactly like you my two girls"

Sihle: "you hurt me Marcel you really did" I held her waist and kissed her deeply she pressed her body on mine letting out a moan I lifted her up taking us to bed where we made love slowly.

We were now cuddling naked with her head on my chest

Me: "I have something to tell you or rather ask you"

Sihle: "what is it?"

Me: "I want us to run away" she looked up looking at my face with a raised eyebrow

Sihle: "run away?"

Me: "yes"

Sihle: "we have trackers in our bodies they will find us"

Me: "I will take them out" she widened her eyes "I will it won't hurt I'll get dad's medical kit and take them out. When I turned 18 I got access to my trust fund from my grandparents it mine it enough to sustain us for at least 2 years if we live on a budget I met a guy at school he will help out we will both withdraw money from our accounts the one our parents have access to we will open new account put it there they won't be able to access"

Sihle: "you know daddy can access any bank in this country Marcel they will find us"

Me: "we will leave the country"

Sihle: "what?! No!! Marcel I'm not leaving my parents I can't no please don't do this" she started crying

Me: "sihle your father will kill me you know he will, we will come back just not now" she shook her head I wiped her tears but they kept coming out "please I'm begging you I love you Sihle and I already love our baby I don't want to lose you both please"

Sihle: "my parents Marcel my brothers and sister I can't Marcel I don't want to please" I sighed

Me: "they will never let us be together you know that"

Sihle: "I can't I can't" I kissed her

Me: "I wasn't asking for permission we going" she nodded then let out a loud I held her tighter put her face on my chest so she won't be loud "we going to be okay, I'm gonna get a job you will go back to school after giving birth we going to be okay you will see" I kissed her head "I love you too much to let them separate us. Please stop crying I'll take care of you both" she cried until she fell asleep I called Steve

Steve: "Marcel" he was going to move my trust fund money to an account in Mozambique Maputo that's where we were going it was close I was going to drive I just needed to sell my car and buy a new one that dad wouldn't be able to track

Me: "have you done it?"

Steve: "yes and I found you a buyer well it my brother his been wanting a car like yours but it's too expensive and you sell yours at less price so he wants it"

Me: "thank you man really don't know how I was going to pull this off with you"

Steve: "are you sure you want to do this my man? Your parents can't be that bad you old bro you turning 19 in like a month having a baby is not that bad"

Me: "they will take her away from me and her father will kill me I have no other choice"

Steve: "you really love her?" I looked at Sihle and smiled

Me: "more than I love myself" he whistled

Steve: "that's dangerous" I chuckled

Me: "I know"

Steve: "you sure your parents won't find you"

Me: "I don't know, knowing them they will find us but I'm hoping they won't well at least until Sihle gives birth I just wish she was older I'd marry her you know it wouldn't be easy for them to separate us if we married"

Steve: "I know bro I know"

Me: "let's talk tomorrow" I dropped the call held Sihle tighter she stirred a little

Sihle: "I love you Marcel" I kissed her head Me: "I know baby I love you too that's why I'm doing this" I whispered

.

#Sphe

*

*

Liam: "all I'm saying is that I'm not ready for that type of commitment there are lot of beautiful woman out there it wouldn't be fair on them if I got married" we all laughed I was at Hope's house with my

siblings and their better halves we were having our monthly hang outs this time it was a braai at Hope's house we were all chilling outside by the patio drinking after having dinner

Nosi: "you will never change!"

Thando: "his a lost soul"

Liam: "I'm a caring soul tell them little brother" I put my hands up shaking my head

Avery: "don't compare yourself to Sphe he has Amelia"

Liam: "maybe if I had an Amelia I'll think of settling down"

Me: "I don't like the way you always complimenting my girl Liam it not right"

Hope: "Liam you wouldn't !!! He loves that girl"

Liam: "oh chill out I won't go for your girl but if you don't trust her maybe you two shouldn't be together" I shook my head

Avery: "Liam when he beats your ass up I won't stop him"

Thando: "seriously Liam don't do that again" Liam once slept with my girl back when I was in varsity it wasn't a big deal because I didn't love her even though I did beat him up because he wasn't supposed to do that to me

Me: "I'll fuck you up Liam I swear not even mom will stop me"

Liam: "you all need to chill out like seriously Jesus I fucked up once she was a hoe anyway she wanted me because I was working you were student I did you a favor before you fell for her" I chuckled in disbelief

Thando: "can we move on from this"

Preston: "should we leave my love"

Thando: "not yet"

Nosi: "you guys wanna leave so early"

Preston: "we have a thing early morning"

Olwam: "what thing?" Thando giggled

Thando: "his parents are coming over we going to church and lunch with them"

Nosi: "your father didn't tell me he was in the province"

Preston: "his coming in the morning"

Nosi: "I'll call him we need to talk"

Liam: "I still don't understand how our sister ended up being with your nephew Nosi" we all laughed while Thando pouted

Thando: "don't start with me Liam I'm older than you"

Shelton: "I'll go check on Hermione"

Hope: "okay baby" he kissed her cheek then walked back in the house

Nosi: "I need to find myself a white man" we laughed

Olwam: "what happened to your boyfriend?" Nosi rolled her eyes

Nosi: "I don't even know what I was thinking dating a zulu man"

Liam&Avery: "hey!!!"

Avery: "I feel offended"

Nosi: "no seriously the very first time I decided to be with a zulu guy and it just had to be someone who has 4 crazy baby mama's like what the hell" we all laughed loudly "as if that's not the worst this other time we having sex he comes within a minute so after he gets off me I just lay on the bed disappointed as fuck he asks me if I have been drink Stone cool drink and taking medlemon, I just looked at him irritated and confused as hell" we all can't stop laughing

Olwam: "they not all like that though"

Avery: "tell her baby" I stood up walked away because my phone was ringing

Me: "hello baby"

Amelia: "hey I miss you" I smiled

Me: "I know baby I also miss you"

Amelia: "when are you coming home?"

Me: "closing at work next week I'll be back that Friday probably going to get there at night I'll see you the following day"

Amelia: "I really miss you Sphe"

Me: "what do you want me to do baby? I have to work I can't just come back" she sighed

Amelia: "you think I don't know that?!"

Me: "don't snap at me Amelia or we going to have a problem"

Amelia: "okay I'm sorry"

Me: "I'll see you soon" she didn't say anything "I'm sorry Amelia I love you okay"

Amelia: "I love you too. How is the braai going?"

Me: "good no complaints, how's my daughter doing?" She giggled

Amelia: "I'm not pregnant Sphe stop"

Me: "why don't you want to have my kids Amelia?"

Amelia: "marry me first"

Me: "okay, will you marry me?" We laughed

Amelia: "after I graduate and get a job"

Me: "baby you doing medicine and you only going to do your second year next year"

Amelia: "we not in a rush"

Me: "I'm getting old"

Amelia: "stop"

Me: "how are the period pains?"

Amelia: "the worst but I took some pain killers so I'm okay"

Me: "the bed feels so cold without you" she giggled

Amelia: "to think we will only get to spend a night together next year February"

Me: "fuck that shit you sleeping in my arms Saturday"

Amelia: "you know I can't my parents will be back from their trip"

Me: "you gonna have to make up some shit baby"

Amelia: "I can always introduce you to my father"

Me: "I see you want me to die baby I get that I've troubled you but have some mercy I'd like to see Christmas and at least make you pregnant before dying" she giggled

Amelia: "you such a coward"

Me: "no I simply want to live a little longer"

Amelia: "sphelele"

Me: "yes Vuyolwethu"

Amelia: "I love you I really do, don't ever hurt me"

Me: "baby what's going on?"

Amelia: "nothing I'm just saying"

Me: "don't scare me like that Amelia"

Amelia: "you love me too much" I sighed because it was true I loved her so much it was close to obsession

Me: "yes. Yes I do" I breathed out "come spend Christmas with my family"

Amelia: "your mother doesn't like me"

Me: "my mother doesn't know you"

Amelia: "okay I'll speak to mom when they come back"

Me: "good. You going to meet the rest of my family we going to Dumisa this year so you will meet everyone my uncles aunts and grandparents"

Amelia: "woah!!" I laughed "baby I can't I'm not ready they all know Snakho all of a sudden you coming with me"

Me: "I don't care I'm with you now I'm going to marry you"

Amelia: "maybe next Christmas"

Me: "no this year"

Amelia: "they will hate me"

Me: "they won't I promise and my mom is the sweetest person you could ever meet she will love you because I love you"

Amelia: "okay" Fuck I loved her

Me: "marry me Vuyolwam please"

Amelia: "are you being serious"

Me: "yes" she giggled

Amelia: "I just turned 18 baby come on" I bought her a Hublot watch and Dior handbag it left a dent on my account but seeing her face when I gave it to her was worth it

Me: "yes we can get married"

Amelia: "dad would never allow that baby let's wait a bit, okay?"

Me: "I don't want to wait but okay"

Amelia: "I'll see you Saturday can't wait to kiss you" I chuckled

Me: "you so obsessed with my lips" she giggled sweetly I could tell she was blushing it made me smile

Amelia: "let me go my sister wants to talk to me. I love you"

Me: "I love you Vuyolwam" she hung up I went back to the table found them standing up "everyone leaving?"

Avery: "we all going to Kong"

Me: "clubbing? Okay. What about the kids?"

Hope&Olwam: "nannies"

Thando: "the mothers have spoken" we laughed

Nosi: "I'll ride with you Sphe I plan on getting drunk" I nodded

Me: "we sleeping here"

Hope: "no we taking a cab we all coming back here I won't have you guys driving drunk and giving mom a heart attack"

Liam: "just so we clear I'm coming back with a girl I'll have sex in your house Hope"

Hope: "as if you've never done that" we all left for the club

.

#Amelia

*

*

I was woken up by someone knocking softly on my door I went to open it was Marcel he was dressed he just pulled me to him and gave me a tight hug

Me: "what's wrong?"

Marcel: "I love you I love you so much take care of Brianna and mama and our little sister" we pulled apart he kissed my forehead

Me: "what going? You being weird"

Marcel: "I'm leaving. We leaving Sihle and I we running away" I pulled him into my room closed the door

Me: "what you talking about"

Marcel: "Sihle is pregnant" I widen my eyes and held my chest as my heart started beating crazy "I messed up I know and you know what will happen when the parents come back"

Me: "yes you messed up but don't do this Marcel please you going to make things worse please don't put our family through this"

Marcel: "I love her too much Amelia and you know they will force us apart and they might even make her have an abortion we have no choice but to go"

Me: "where are you going? How are you even going to survive? Who will take care of your baby? You need mom now more than ever Sihle can't even a washing machine or wash dishes"

Marcel: "that what maids are for" I shook my head held his hands

Me: "don't do this mama will die Marcel and you know dad and uncle vuyani will find you"

Marcel: "I love you" he kissed my forehead and walked out I followed him running after him

Me: "tell me where you going so I can keep sending you money"

Marcel: "then they will definitely find us"

Me: "Marcel please don't do this" we got outside Sihle was already in the car "khanya!!" He put his hand over my mouth

Marcel: "you will wake up granny" I moved his hand

Me: "don't go"

Marcel: "I have no choice" I opened the passenger seat Sihle got out we hugged

Me: "please talk to him you two don't have to go"

Sihle: "we don't have a choice Amelia" we pulled apart

Me: "take care of each other"

Marcel: "don't tell on us okay they coming back in the morning it would have given us enough time"

Me: "okay I love you both"

Sihle: "we love you too tell my parents I'm sorry" she wiped her tears

Marcel: "I'll keep in touch with you just don't tell the parents" I nodded he kissed my forehead they got in the car I watched them driving out I went back in locked switched on the alarm I went to my room slept with a heavy heart Marcel was basically my twin.

.

I was woken up by soft kisses I smiled and opened my eyes it was my beautiful glowing mother I giggled and sat up we hugged

Me: "how was the trip?" She giggled shaking her head my mother was really beautiful

Mom: "it was fantastic your father and I renewed our vows"

Me: "without your children there!!"

Mom: "I'm sorry it was a surprise but your baby sister was there" I rolled my eyes

Me: "you going to love her more than you love me?"

Mom: "I love you all equally Amelia" I pouted she rolled her eyes "your brother is gone so early in the morning" she walked out I got off the bed went downstairs they were all back Brianna was already on dad's lap t

Me: "dada" he smiled and opened his arms we hugged he kissed my forehead

Dad: "morning my angel" aunty Sne got in

Sne: "where is Sihle? She's not in her room" uncle vuyani stood up

Vuyani: "Brianna where is your sister?"

Brianna: "I don't know she wasn't in her room when I woke up last saw her last night when we went to sleep"

Mom: "Marcel is also not in his room"

Dad: "maybe they went to the shop"

Sne: "for what? They have everything they need here" dad took out his phone and called someone

Dad: "Marcel's phone says number doesn't exist"

Vuyani: "sihle's well"

Sne: "vuyani something doesn't feel good I want my little girl"

Me: "they left" everyone looked at me "they ran away" uncle vuyani was in front of me in a second dad pulled me back

Vuyani: "talk now" I cleared my throat

Me: "I don't know much all I know is that they've been in a relationship for like a year and they ran away" mom screamed while aunty Sne started crying dad went to mom she was trying to run up the stairs but tripped and fell she rolled over the stairs dad caught her before she hit the ground floor her white leggings was filled with blood I just froze

Insert 11

^

^

#Amelia

*

*

Me: "mommy!!" I ran to her she was crying and screaming in pain

Mom: "my child Brian save my child" a car hooted dad carried her we all followed him out we got in the car uncle vuyani drove off mom kept crying saying dad must save her child

Dad: "zama I'll save you both you will see just calm down ma'Mnguni please"

Mom: "it hurts it really hurt"

Dad: "just hang in there my wife please, I wish I could take away the pain. Vuyani drive faster!!"

Me: "mommy" Brianna was crying

Brianna: "dada I'm scared"

Dad: "it okay princess mama is fine" I brought Brianna close to me held her tightly she cried harder wetting my shoulder we got to the hospital mom was rushed in straight to the ward we all sat down dad

was pacing up and down he also had blood on his jeans and t-shirt everyone was quite we sat in the waiting room for hours before a doctor came to us we all stood up he smiled dad breathed out loudly

Doc: "she's fine she's asleep your daughter is in the nursery premature but completely fine and it a good thing she came out now she's too big"

Dad: "thank you man I owe you one" the doc blushed aunty Sne and I looked at each other she mouthed gay I laughed silently

Doc: "just doing my job"

Me: "can we see them?"

Doc: "of course the nurse will show you" he walked out we followed the nurse started with mom she was sleeping peacefully

Brianna: "dada mommy had my little sister?"

Dad: "yes princess" she squealed

Brianna: "I wanna see her dada I wanna see her, is she beautiful like me?" We all laughed

Dad; "yes she's just like you" he gave her a soft peck

Brianna: "mommy is sleeping let's go dada" she basically pulled dad out of the ward I followed after them we went to the nursery the nurse showed us the baby "ooh pretty she's so pretty dada"

Me: "she looks so pink and big"

Dad: "all babies look pink, can I hold her?" The nurse nodded and gave the baby to dad

Brianna: "what's her name?"

Dad: "Madison. Madison Magcina James"

Me: "that's nice daddy" he kissed my head she opened her eyes "she has mom's eyes"

Dad: "just like Marcel" he shook his head "I'll kill that boy when I find him"

Me: "daddy don't please his scared and confused"

Dad: "I don't want to talk about it" we stayed for another hour then left with uncle vuyani and aunty Sne

Sne: "Amelia get me your mother's bag pack some toiletries and change I'd clothes for your father I'll take it back to sleep after resting"

Vuyani: "I'll tell one of the security guys and take it to the hospital you need to rest Sne"

Me: "okay"

Vuyani: "how long have you known about their relationship Amelia?"

Me; "just few months" he nodded and increased the speed

Brianna: "daddy slow down"

Vuyani: "sorry princess" he slowed down "did they say anything about where they going?"

Me: "no they didn't"

Sne: "you have to find my baby vuyani"

Vuyani: "I will baby I promise" we got home I went to get the baby's bag from the nursery went to mom's room packed a bag for her and dad took it to uncle vuyani he took it to Theo the security guy then they left I took my phone called Sphe

Sphe: "Vuyolwam"

Me: "hey baby"

Sphe: "you okay?"

Me: "I will be as soon as you get here"

Sphe: "few more days my love be patient for me okay. Now tell your man why you sound sad"

Me: "Marcel ran away with Sihle when mom found out she tried running upstairs I think to check marcel's room but she fell on the stairs there so much blood baby she almost lost the baby"

Sphe: "my God baby, How is she now?"

Me: "she's okay both her and the baby when we left the hospital she was still asleep"

Sphe: "how are you my love?"

Me: "was so scared Sphe and she wouldn't stop crying along with Brianna"

Sphe: "I'm sorry baby wish I was there"

Me: "me too. Wish you could just hold me and tell me everything will be find God I miss you Sphe"

Sphe: "as soon as I get to dbn I'm coming there, I love you my love"

Me: "I love you too"

.

#Sphe

*

*

I was packing my bags getting ready to go home when someone knocked I went to open it Snakho she looked so beautiful but obviously had nothing on Amelia I'm yet to meet a woman more pretty than my woman I doubt there is one

Me: "hey"

Snakho: "hi" I made way for her to get in she stopped in the kitchen took out juice from the fridge "I've never seen your fridge so empty"

Me: "I'm going home so I didn't do any grocery, How are you Snakho?"

Snakho: "I'm good considering and you"

Me: "I'm well"

Snakho: "what you doing?"

Me: "packing"

Snakho: "come I'll pack for you" I looked at her confused last time I saw her was at the mall when she and her friends wanted to attack Amelia I haven't been answering her calls

Me: "no I'm good" she rolled her eyes walked to my room I followed her my house was filled with Amelia's pictures especially my bedroom there was a large picture of us I was topless she was wearing my t-shirt it was hanged on the wall she looked at it for a long time

Snakho: "you really love her don't you? You never put my pictures anywhere in your house but look at her she's all over"

Me: "don't do this Snakho don't hurt yourself you only going to hate me more"

Snakho: "I wish I could hate you" she started packing my clothes

Me: "why you here Snakho?"

Snakho: "I'm going home today I need the car"

Me: "I can't borrow you my car Snakho"

Snakho: "why not?!"

Me: "we not together anymore"

Snakho: "yeah well you still send me money and I still need the car it a long distance you always give it to me"

Me: "you need the money Snakho don't make me regret giving it to you and you can take a taxi"

Snakho: "Sphe!" She pouted I sat on the bed

Me: "fine take the bmw" she smiled

Snakho: "I always take it you might as well give it to me" we laughed

Me: "now you pushing it"

Snakho: "you got meat? I'll cook us dinner"

Me: "I need to get going Snakho"

Snakho: "I'm hungry and you need to eat go defrost something" I went to the kitchen defrost some pork chops and wors I been craving it I took a beer out of the fridge took my phone called Amelia

Amelia: "tell me you've left" I chuckled sitting on the high chair

Me: "not yet I'll leave soon"

Amelia: "guess I'll see you tomorrow"

Me: "I can still come there"

Amelia: "by the time you get here it will be late Sphe go rest I'll spend the day with you tomorrow"

Me: "okay baby" Snakho came in started preparing for cooking

Amelia: "I love you Sphe"

Me: "I love you too honey" Snakho rolled her eyes "how is the baby"

Amelia: "Madison is amazing cute as a button"

Me: "still no luck with Marcel"

Amelia: "nah they really don't want to be found dad found his car in Jhb turns out he sold it the guy didn't have much information, both Marcel and sihle's accounts were empty turns out they emptied them before leaving"

Me: "how is your mom holding up?"

Amelia: "not good at all aunty Sne as well it so bad sphe"

Me: "I'm sorry baby"

Amelia: "it okay" Snakho dropped a pot "what is that?" I shot her an angry look

Me: "a pot fell I'm cleaning up before leaving"

Amelia: "okay we'll talk later call me when you get here"

Me: "okay baby later"

Amelia: "later" she ended the call I put my phone down

Snakho: "you so good at lying" I chuckled

Me: "no I'm not"

Snakho: "I'm making pap and gravy or do you want chakalaka"

Me: "chakalaka"

Snakho: "alright"

Me: "I've missed your cooking" she giggled shaking her head

Snakho: "good!" I laughed

Me: "ouch"

Snakho: "what? Barbie isn't domesticated?"

Me: "no not really she tries though but I don't expect her too I don't need her to be domesticated I just love her and I can always hire a maid, a nanny and a chef if need be as long as I have her"

Snakho: "what is it about her that's got you so gaga"

Me: "I don't know man I really don't know but there's just something about her presence"

Snakho: "I'm happy for you Sphe you deserve to be happy but I still hate her she stole you from me" we laughed "I still wanna hit her"

Me: "you already frighten the poor child"

Snakho: "neh? I really scare her don't I?" She giggled "I think she almost peed herself that day in the toilet"

Me: "she's a child Snakho and she's sheltered overly protected she's a white girl in a black body"

Snakho: "is that why you love her so much" I chuckled

Me: "it just a tip of the iceberg she's simply perfect for me"

Snakho: "well if you happy I'm good"

Me: "what about you? Who you driving crazy?"

Snakho: "just working on myself I'm still not over the miscarriage and thank you for getting me a therapist and paying for it I really appreciate it"

Me: "is it working?"

Snakho: "yeah slowly but I'm getting there"

Me: "I'm glad"

Snakho: "you a good guy Sphe thank you"

Me: "I was raised by an amazing woman" she smiled brightly

Snakho: "true she's amazing"

Me: "and she loves you"

Snakho: "she will love Barbie as well"

Me: "I hope so" I got off the chair took my luggage to my Porsche when I got back she was dishing up we ate in front of the tv she cleaned up when we were done we got in the cars I closed the garage my gti was still there I drove off went past the garage filled up my tank bought some energy drink I drove off speeding to kzn.

I called her when I parked a little further from the gate

Amelia: "baby" her sleepy voice was so sexy

Me: "sorry I woke you up"

Amelia: "it's okay"

Me: "please come out I'm by the gate" I heard shuffling

Amelia: "Sphe it 02:15"

Me: "please I won't sleep without seeing you"

Amelia: "with Marcel running off dad upped the security at home I can't leave I'm sorry I'll see you during the day" I sighed rubbing my face

Me: "I need to see you Amelia please"

Amelia: "baby the alarm will ring as soon as I open the door dad is going to freak out"

Me: "Amelia you not a baby for God sakes!!"

Amelia: "I'm sorry"

Me: "fine" I dropped the call drove off going home

.

#Amelia

*

*

I finished packing my bag and sat on the bed with a sigh I was going to sphe's house it took lot of convincing to let dad to let me go mom and aunty Mbali ganged up on him he finally let me go after he spoke to Hope who pretended to be my friend's mother. I was waiting for Sphe to pick me up dad had left earlier they were still looking for Marcel, Brianna had left with granny they went to Jhb uncle Siya's house for Christmas at home they were not celebrating Christmas this year. I got off the bed went to the nursery I found mom breast feeding Madison

Me: "hey"

Mom: "hi baby, you ready?"

Me: "yeah"

Mom: "have fun and be yourself they will love you"

Me: "I hope so mom I'm so scared"

Mom: "you beautiful and smart with an amazing personality they will love you believe me" she waved for me to come closer I did she gave me a soft peck "just be you and have fun"

Me: "I'll try mama" she smiled my poor mother was even losing so much weight over this Marcel situation "dad will find him mom you will see"

Mom: "he doesn't know anything Amelia they both don't know anything how will they take care of each other Marcel really didn't think things through"

Me: "they will be fine you will see"

Mom: "I just want my baby home I don't even care that he is in a relationship with Sihle even though I don't understand how it happened"

Me: "they love each other mama Marcel more but they madly in love with each other"

Mom: "sihle is a baby what does she know about love" I shrugged my shoulders my phone rang it was Sphe

Me: "hey"

Sphe: "I'm here"

Me: "I'm coming" I stood up gave mom a hug and kissed Madison's cheek "I love you both"

Mom: "we love you too" I walked out went to my room took my bag I left found him parked outside the gate I put my bag in the back seat got in the passenger seat we kissed he drove off

Sphe: "ready to see the rurals" I chuckled

Me: "yeah. I still don't understand why we can't just leave tomorrow morning"

Sphe: "everyone is leaving today"

Me: "we could have left tomorrow"

Sphe: "na.a anyway I'm gonna marry you soon so you need to get to know my family" I rolled my eyes looked out the window "will you need anything?" I shook my head

Me: "I'm okay" he stopped in the garage went in the shop while the petrol attendant was filling up the tank after awhile he came back with a plastic put it on my lap and drove off I was wearing a body hugging medium sleeve white maxi dress with my weave tied in a messy bun and sandals, it was juice water and snacks I took out pocket of sliced biltong and bottle of water

Sphe: "we should have taken your car" I smiled we had the same car just different colors we were on that Porsche cayenne tip

Me: "you should have told me to pick you up" he chuckled I kissed his cheek

Sphe: "kiss me properly" we kissed shortly while he tried looking at the road

Me: "you gonna get us killed"

Sphe: "so what?!"

Me: "mxm you crazy" he laughed

Sphe: "I've been thinking"

Me: "that's not a good thing you shouldn't think babe you should just look pretty"

Sphe: "voestek Vuyolwethu" we laughed "what the hell were your parents thinking giving you that name anyway" I pushed him

Me: "ouma named me"

Sphe: "it a boy's name"

Me: "I don't care"

Sphe: "so as I was saying before you opened your big mouth Vuyolwethu"

Me: "I don't have a big mouth!!"

Sphe: "debatable" I gasped

Me: "take that back!" I pinched him he pushed me off laughing

Sphe: "you going to make me make an accident Amelia"

Me: "I don't have a big mouth Sphe"

Sphe: "okay you just talk to much"

Me: "say that again when you want me to suck you"

Sphe: "woah!! I was joking Vuyolwam" I laughed

Me: "yeah I thought so"

Sphe: "don't talk like that I'm looking forward to tonight"

Me: "Sphe I'm not gonna sleep with you with your parents in the same house"

Sphe: "I have a back room in my gran's place that's where we and my siblings are going to sleep my grand mother from mom's side we all built our back rooms in her yard for when we go to dumisa before she passed away. My parents are going to be at my grandparents place they have their own back room there"

Me: "okay but I still won't give you some"

Sphe: "now you seriously losing left Amelia I haven't had some in over a month"

Me: "we abstaining"

Sphe: "abstain by yourself you better not come when I'm in you because you abstaining" I chuckled

Me: "that doesn't even make sense babe"

Sphe: "to me it totally does"

Me: "that's because you have few missing neurons in your brain" we drove the rest of the way listening to music and sphe being silly until we turned to a gravel road

Sphe: "dad loves that tiny shop he wanted to buy it but mom refused" there were boys leaning on the wall outside it

Me: "why?"

Sphe: "holds memories of Apple munch buying"

Me: "what's an apple munch?" He stopped the car and reversed back to the shop he stopped in front of it

Sphe: "I'm coming" he got off greeted some guys he took out his wallet gave them money then went in the shop after few minutes he got in with two ice lollies "this is an apple munch" he drove off

Me: "it tastes nice"

Sphe: "I know" he slowed down "that's where we going to sleep, want to check it out now or later?" He checked his watch "it almost dinner time let's just go" he drove off

Me: "other houses don't have electricity"

Sphe: "they can't afford it babe it still expensive this side people are waiting for the government to install it" he hooted in front of a huge steel gate after awhile a kid opened he drove in "well this is home home"

Me: "so many houses" he chuckled and cupped my face

Sphe: "we a huge family" we kissed shortly then he got off and came to my side he opened my door I looked at him "nervous?"

Me: "as fuck"

Sphe: "they will love you just don't swear" I pushed him he was laughing "come" I shook my head "they can see us from the kitchen you making them curios just come" I breathed out he took my hand I got out "did I tell you how beautiful you look? Like a true Mntungwa wife" I looked down blushing he smiled and kissed my cheek "I love you"

Me: "I love you" we walked to the door he knocked and opened the door we got In I should have known by the lot of cars in the yard that there were lot of people it was mostly men though

Sphe: "boh khumalo"

Them: "Mntungwa" he went around shaking hands Avery winked at me smiling I looked down

Man: "who is this lovely lady?"

Sphe: "this is ma'James soon to be mam khumalo I love her and I'm complete with her"

Man2: "awu makoti welcome" Sphe took my hand went around introducing me I got lot of hand shakes and cheek kisses, Sphe knelt in front of an old lady you could tell she looked beautiful during her hey days

Sphe: "makhulu this is your daughter in law Vuyolwethu James from Durban" the old day smiled and gave me a soft peck

Her: "welcome my child, sphelele your mothers are in the kitchen" he got off the floor and introduced me to his aunts, his father looked so much like a Avery it was weird we walked to the kitchen five women were there as well as Thando, Olwam and Hope who jumped off the chair and gave me a big hug

Hope: "can't believe you here!!" I just smiled

Thando: "hey Amelia"

Me: "hi"

Sphe: "mom" his mother had been looking at me with a curious look I knew her from pictures "mom this is my woman Amelia James babe this is my mom themba lika dad Yamkelani Khumalo just call her mom" he introduced me to the other women his uncles wives and his aunt

Yammy: "hello" she looked at me long and hard I kept shifting my feet the silence in the kitchen was too loud she cleared her throat after awhile "you love my son Amelia?"

Me: "yes ma'am with all that I am would do anything to keep him happy" she slowly smiled until her smile was wide and bright she opened her arms I walked to her she hugged me her tiny body was warm I heard Sphe breathing out

Yammy: "welcome to our family Amelia" we pulled apart she kissed my cheek

Sphe: "come here baby" I walked to him the white woman who is Sarah and his father's twin's wife pulled his cheek

Sarah: "get out of here we will take care of her"

Sphe: "you okay baby?" I nodded he walked out

Sarah: "red or white wine?" My mouth hung open they all laughed

Yammy: "don't corrupt the poor child"

Olwam: "she drinks champagne"

Yammy: "ooh hope you told your man to buy you some we drink wine"

Hope: "I doubt Sphe bought it. Sphe!!" He came in running "what is Amelia supposed to drink" he chuckled shaking his head and walked out

Me: "I'm fine with juice"

Sarah: "so you don't drink? Be honest" the look she was giving me

Me: "I'll have white wine" they laughed

Sisipho: "I thought so" Yammy was just shaking her head with a smile on her face she was flawlessly beautiful she was perfect even her tiny body Sphe came back with a backpack he put it on the counter opened it took out bottles of wine and a bottle of moët he gave me a soft peck

Sphe: "don't get drunk I love you" I nodded he walked out

Thando: "here" she gave me a coffee mug I looked at all of them they were drinking from coffee mugs I poured she took all the bottles put them under the counter I just shook my head giggling

Yammy: "Hope and Thando take out the plate we need to dish up before mam'ncane comes here to check on the food"

Thando: "yes mom" I sat on the high chair and listened to these beautiful talk about tomorrow's lunch and the sheep and pig that was slaughtered for the braai tomorrow night. After dinner we went outside Sphe and his siblings and cousins we all sat down spoke while drinking

.

#Marcel

*

*

I was sitting on the chair staring at Sihle she was still asleep after the operation when our prince was wheeled in by the nurse I stood up waiting for them to get to me she took him out of the cot gave him to me

Her: "there we go daddy" I took him she smiled and walked out I looked at my son he was so beautiful and looked like a girl

Me: "hey there" I kissed his forehead and wiped his face as my tears kept on falling on his face I was ready to go home now

Insert 12

^

^

#Marcel

*

*

Sihle woke up while I was starting at our son Sbani we decided to name him Sbanisethu Sothando James she just cried

Me: "baby what wrong?" She cried louder I started to panic "nosihle baby, should I call the doctor?"

Sihle: "I wanna go home" she whispered

Me: "what?"

Sihle: "I wanna go home!! I want my mom Marcel I want to go home"

Me: "now?"

Sihle: "yes call her now tell her to come fetch me I want to go home" I brushed her hair kissed her forehead

Me: "please calm down we will go"

Sihle: "no! Take your phone and call them now I want my mother Marcel"

Me: "you don't love me no more?" She stopped crying

Sihle: "I love you you know I love you"

Me: "I love you too so does our son our light" I took the bed controller raised the bed so she sits up then I gave her Sbani

Sihle: "his ours? His beautiful"

Me: "his our half you half me his what we made from loving each other"

Sihle: "we need our parents Marcel"

Me: "I thought so too maybe not yet, you 15 now let's wait for you to be legal then we can get married and go home"

Sihle: "no Marcel no I want to go home now we will get married later" I sighed

Me: "okay"

Sihle: "call them now!" Sbani stirred a little and started crying she gave him to me

Me: "feed him"

Sihle: "no! Feed him what?"

Me: "milk. Breast. Feed him" I helped her hold him properly she started feeding him he

Sihle: "ouch!" She started crying again "his sucking too hard"

Me: "I'll go buy formula when we get home"

Sihle: "I'm not going back to that flat I want to go home call my parents now" I huffed

Me: "they will separate us"

Sihle: "we have a child that's not easy"

Me: "you will see" she gave me a dead stare Sihle's eyes will always be my weakness

Sihle: "just take us home Marcel" I looked down

Me: "can we leave in December bond with the baby a little" it was June already

Sihle: "no we leaving now" I looked at her "give me your phone Marcel I'll call my mother myself"

Me: "you want your father to kill me!"

Sihle: "don't raise your voice at me I've had it with you"

Me: "you want to leave me Sihle? Is that why you pushing for us to go home?"

Sihle: "ooh don't bullshit me I love you and you know that, I'm crazy about you but I just wanna go home I need my mom for this Marcel we can't raise Sbani by ourselves"

Me: "but I hired a maid Sihle"

Sihle: "she steals from us" I nodded

Me: "yeah well I can hire someone else we have the money"

Sihle: "no my child will be raised the way I was raised Marcel not on some budget"

Me: "we will raise him right just like how we were raised he will have the finest things"

Sihle: "it not even about money Marcel I've been missing home for so long I can't take it anymore" she looked so sad and drained I took out my phone dialed mom it rang to voicemail I called her again she answered when I was giving up

Mom: "hello" I head baby's noise in the background I remembered she would have given birth to my baby sister already

Me: "mama" there was silence a little then she sniffed

Mom: "Marcel baby is that you? Please come home we not even angry anymore just come home"

Me: "uhm can you please come get us just you don't tell dad or her parents"

Mom: "yes yes I'm coming tell me where you are I'll be there"

Me: "promise me you won't tell dad and the others"

Mom: "I promise you Marcel believe me"

Me: "I'll send you the coordinates"

Mom: "okay baby mama loves you, okay?"

Me: "I love you too mama" I hung up "mama is coming"

Sihle: "you could have called my mom"

Me: "for all we know she's in Beverly, Sihle do you really love me? Why you so hell bent on your father finding us first? Do you think it fair to call him while my parents are not here who is going to fight for me? Who is going to calm him down?" She looked down "I'm sick and tired of you if you don't want me anymore dump me go back to the state and leave my son behind! We should presenting a united front but you keep pushing me like this fuck you bra" I walked out just sat on the floor and cried silently for the first since we started I regretted going to her room that day I regretted sleeping with her I hated my heart for loving her more than I was supposed to. Someone knelt next to me and brushed my back I looked up it was the doctor we had used

Her: "everything okay Mr James?"

Me: "no uhm I mean yes we just waiting for our parents, when will you discharge her so I can settle the bill?"

Her: "maybe in a day or two"

Me: "my mom will be here in an hour or two I think she will want to transfer her to South Africa" she nodded

Her: "okay let me check on her" she walked in I wiped my tears when the doctor came out I stood up

Me: "is she okay" she smiled

Her: "she's okay"she sighed "I know having a baby at especially at the age you both in is not ideal it can raise lot of issues I'd suggest you see someone"

Me: "is there something wrong with her?"

Her: "physically yeah she will need to see an ob that side I'll write a referral for her and contact a ob from our sister hospital that side we will discuss that later, emotionally I don't think she is okay she was also crying you both need each other and you need a strong support system. Do you have that at home?"

Me: "yes"

Her: "good you both need it" I looked at her walking away thinking for all I know I could be in hospital or dead tomorrow I walked back in Sbani was in the cot Sihle was facing the other side I sat on the chair put my arms on the bed and pressed my face on my arms we all sat in silence.

Few hours later my phone rang I answered

Me: "yeah"

Mom: "I'm here at reception, why am I in hospital Marcel?"

Me: "I'm coming" I woke Sihle up she had been sleeping I walked out met mom at reception

Mom: "oh my baby" she threw herself at me I held her tightly she was just crying she had lost so much weight "you fine you here"

Me: "I'm so sorry mama I shouldn't have left like that" we pulled apart she touched my face then hugged me again "I'm sorry mama I'm so sorry mama please stop crying"

Mom: "I've missed you with every passing minute" she pulled back

Me: "please tell me you forgive me" she slapped me so hard just as I held my cheek she slapped me on my other cheek now they were both on fire I just looked down "I'm sorry" she hugged me again I just held her she was still crying

Mom: "where is Sihle?" I pulled back

Me: "let me take you to her" I took her hand we walked to the ward we walked in Sihle was holding Sbani

Mom: "oh God no" she looked at me shaking her head "tell me it's not as it seems lie to me and say you can explain"

Sihle: "mama" she looked at Sihle still shaking her head

Mom: "tell me you fools did not make a baby"

Me: "mama we sorry"

Mom: "Jesus vuyani is going to kill you both you've ruined our family"

Sihle: "we sorry mama it was a mistake" her voice was braking

Mom: "Marcel khanya James!!!" Sbani woke up and started crying "feed the child!" Sihle did

Me: "mama please you have to help us out"

Mom: "hhe! Mama please you have to help us" she mimicked me "where was I when you were having sex climaxing and stuff? Hhe ayi fry us Marcel we are your eggs! Between both your fathers you both dead" Sihle and I looked at each other "I want to see your doctor we going home" Sihle rang the bell a nurse came in we spoke to her she said she will call the doctor.

The gate opened my heart started beating fast Sihle squeezed my hand I looked at her gave her a fake tight smile the driver parked next to the main door I got out opened the door for Sihle and mom they got out mom was carrying Sbani we went in I stood in the foyer for a little then I went in granny was already carrying Sbani Brianna jumped to me we hugged

Brianna: "I've missed you so much Marcel"

Me: "I've also missed you little sis"

Brianna: "you not going to leave again"

Me: "never again" we pulled apart "where is Amelia?"

Brianna: "school" I nodded and sat down

Me: "grams" she shook her head

Granny: "how can you do this to your parents khanya" I looked down

Me: "I wasn't thinking"

Granny: "clearly" I looked at Sihle she was biting her nails

Me: "where is dad?"

Brianna: "he went to Beverly yesterday" I breathed out

Sihle: "I'm gonna go sleep" she tried taking Sbani grams shook her head

Granny: "what do you know about a child Sihle just go sleep marn" she went up I followed her the driver had already taken our bags upstairs I went to my room took a bath I got in my pjs went to bed it was already night I knew it was matter of hours before dad and sihle's parents arrived.

.

#Sphe

*

*

I watched her sleeping she looked so beautiful and peaceful I softly pecked her lips then she poured I couldn't help myself I kissed her more pulling her bottom lip between mine she moaned and held the

back of my neck we kissed deeply she moved up and closer to me her body felt so warm I touched her pussy she was naked I always make her sleep naked so I can just take her whenever I want she pushed her tongue in my mouth I could help the moan that came out of me even if it sounded girly she kept pushing my body until I was laying on my back with her on top of me she fucked me hard and raw after we both came the same time she fell on top of me breathing hard

Me: "well good morning to you lover" she giggled

Amelia: "good morning baby"

Me: "that was epic" I kissed her head "you fucked me like I'm a bitch"

Amelia: "I thought you were one" we laughed

Me: " don't swear me Amelia"

Amelia: "whatever" I spanked her ass grabbing it "ouch" she giggled

Me: "don't stop your squats" she kissed my chest

Amelia: "you so in love with my ass"

Me: "I'm in love with your whole body babe"

Amelia: "just my body"

Me: "of course not" my phone rang I check the caller ID it was Snakho

Amelia: "mxm" she tries getting off me but I held her and cancelled the call "why you not answering it? Is it because I'm here?"

Me: "Amelia you upset I don't want to make it worse by answering"

Amelia: "do you have something to hide?"

Me: "no! Of course not, I don't know why she's calling me babe I told her to stop"

Amelia: "clearly you didn't mean it if she's still calling" I held her chin kissed her

Me: "I'm sorry baby I'm sorry"

Amelia: "I don't want her calling you Sphe and I'm tired of us fighting over her you giving her a foot in our relationship" over the past months Snakho and I had gotten close again she comes by to my house from time to time to cook or clean or do my laundry not that I asked her she just did and sometimes we would chill watch soccer or action movies she enjoyed them like I did unlike Amelia she would rather to sleep or read a book than watch those

Me: "I'm sorry" she rolled her eyes

Amelia: "can we go have breakfast at Wimpy I'm hungry and I'm craving their hash brown"

Me: "instead of an M for me a W for we" I smiled she giggled she loved that advert

Amelia: "let's go" I let go of her we went to shower took a long naughty shower we got out lotioned she did the bed while I got dressed then I sat and watched her getting dressed when she was done we went to wimpy we had breakfast then went shopping

Amelia: "you like this babe?" She turned around her butt cheeks were basically hanging out

Me: "I thought we agreed on no longer buying bum shorts"

Amelia: "I'll wear them with a long blazer if I'm going out"

Me: "I really don't like it when you wear such things Amelia I don't like it when you show your body in public" she pouted giving me a puppy look

Amelia: "I like them Sphe I'll only wear them when I'm with you"

Me: "I guess I mean there are nice" she smiled went back to the fitting room the guy that was standing next to me waiting for his girlfriend was drooling over Amelia I just shook my head and looked aside controlling my anger

Him: "you a lucky guy"

Me: "shut up I don't want to mess you up" he cleared his t.v.and walked a bit further from me Amelia came back out wearing powder blue ripped boyfriend jeans

Amelia: "you like?"

Me: "I love" she smiled went back then came out with her basket that was filled with clothes "is this it babe?"

Amelia: "still need to go to Topshop I need this jacket I saw there"

Me: "but you done here?" We were at cotton on

Amelia: "yep" I went to pay we walked to the next shop we basically spent more time than we had thought at the mall then we bought pizza and went back to her apartment I was spending the weekend there

Me: "you not going to give me a show"

Amelia: "but you saw them babe"

Me: "not the lingerie" she gave me a naughty smile

Amelia: "later" I flopped on the couch opened the tv while she went to leave the plastics in her room I changed to super sport checking soccer highlights she came back and sat between my legs I changed the channel

Me: "I've been thinking"

Amelia: "yes"

Me: "we go home next week you can spend some time with mom"

Amelia: "you know I can't spend a weekend at your house dad will have a fit if he finds out I'm in Durban but not at home"

Me: "just think about it please" I kissed her neck

.

#Marcel

*

*

I woke up in the morning and just laid in bed I was looking forward to the day my stomach started grumbling as much as I was hungry I was scared to go downstairs and face my mom and granny I don't know how it was going to be when my dad is back I just wish I could die if I was more of a coward I would have considered killing myself. After close to an hour staring at the ceiling I got off the bed went to the bathroom I brushed my teeth washed my face then went downstairs I found them in the lounge granny was feeding Sbani a bottle

Me: "morning"

Them: "morning" mom stood up

Mom: "let's go Nosihle"

Me: "where you taking her?"

Mom: "to see a doctor"

Me: "should have told I would have gotten ready"

Mom: "Marcel" she warned

Me: "sorry" I went to the kitchen I found my breakfast in the oven I poured juice sat on the high chair and started eating Brianna got in carrying Sbani I took him

Brianna: "mama says this is your baby yours and Sihle" I nodded "so you going to marry her"

Me: "yes" she smiled

Brianna: "and she's going to stay with us forever" it was hard to believe that sihle and Brianna are the same age Brianna was too much of a baby Sihle matured fast

Me: "yes princess she's going to stay here forever" she sat down and started eating my scramble egg

Brianna: "where were you dada and daddy were looking for you two"

Me: "was in Mozambique"

Brianna: "is it beautiful there?"

Me: "absolutely" her eyes brightened up

Brianna: "will you take me as well? Pretty please" I chuckled

Me: "I'll take you if you pass" she rolled her eyes

Brianna: "I always get A on all my subjects"

Me: "I know. You smart like your big brother" she giggled

Brianna: "Amelia said I'm smart like her"

Me: "well you like me" she stared at me long and hard I raised my eyebrows

Brianna: "you not going to leave again right? Mama cried a lot saying she wants you" I felt so bad

Me: "I won't leave" she nodded and got off the chair walked out I sighed and finished my breakfast Sbani was just asleep he was just two days and so far all he did was sleep wake up when hungry and sleep again I stared at him for a long time my son was beautiful not just beautiful like girl pretty I couldn't wait for him to grown up at that moment I didn't care about dad and uncle vuyani coming one thing I was sure of was that no one is going to separate me from my son. Grams got in

Granny: "been looking for this fellow give him to me" I did

Me: "I'm gonna go bath"

Granny: "I didn't expect a great grandchild so early"

Me: "you know it wasn't planned grams even if I did want a child I would have waited for Sihle she's a baby herself"

Granny: "you shouldn't have gotten in a relationship with her let alone sleep with her"

Me: "I love her"

Granny: "you should have waited"

Me: "I know" I walked out went to my room I took a bath got in my sweatpants and vest I went to bed took my phone called Sihle

Sihle: "yes"

Me: "where are you now"

Sihle: "we at the mall buying some clothes and things for Sbani with mama"

Me: "are you not in pain?"

Sihle: "no I'm okay"

Me: "I miss you so much"

Sihle: "are we okay?"

Me: "I'm sorry about yesterday baby"

Sihle: "can we talk when I get home?"

Me: "yes I love you"

Sihle: "mama is looking at me" she whispered I laughed

Me: "later"

Sihle: "later" I ended the call and just laid on the bed thinking about how we going to convince these people to let us be together.

I was woken up by someone shaking me I opened my eyes it was Sihle I pulled her to me

Sihle: "ouch Marcel it still hurts be careful"

Me: "I'm sorry my love" we kissed slowly and passionately pulled apart after a long time "how was being with mom?" She looked down tears filled her eyes "she gave you a mouthful"

Sihle: "yeah she was so harsh"

Me: "I'm sorry baby" I kissed her

Sihle: "it expected"

Me: "are you willing to fight for us?"

Sihle: "yes"

Me: "good" we kissed the door opened we pulled apart quickly

Mom: "not in my house"

Us: "sorry"

Mom: "come downstairs your fathers are coming up" we got off the bed

Me: "mom please we love each other"

Mom: "maybe we can revisit that conversation when she turns 18 now come" she walked out we quickly kissed each other then followed her just as we got in the lounge dad and uncle vuyani with aunty Sne got in aunty Sne ran to Sihle they hugged tightly Sihle winced in pain aunty Sne was crying she had also lost weight I was still looking at them when someone pushed me to the wall and pressed me on it I felt a hard punch on my cheek Mom screamed I felt another punch before he started strangling me my feet left the ground Sihle and mom were crying trying to pull him back

Vuyani: "you fucker you made my little girl pregnant then took her away from us" he pressed harder I was kicking the air

Sihle: "daddy please!!"

Mom: "Brian do something"

Vuyani: "I'm gonna kill you I swear I'll kill"

Me: "I'm sorry please" my best was wet with blood I couldn't even see where it was coming from he punched me again my left eye closed up same time mom started hitting him he tried to push her back but she fell hitting her head on the couch dad got angry pulled him back threw a punch at they started fighting rolling all the lounge both mom and aunty were crying and screaming for them to stop Sihle had

thrown herself at me holding on to me tightly dad threw uncle vuyani on the glass coffee table he fell on it braking it started bleeding immediately dad pulled him up started punching him repeatedly security guys came rushing in the lounge pulled them apart they both took out their guns pointed them at each other

Insert 13

^

^

#Marcel

*

*

Mom: "put your gun down Brian" he didn't

Vuyani: "it was a mistake you know it was"

Dad: "you touched my wife! I told you to control your anger I'll kill you vuyani this is my wife no one touches her you know that" uncle vuyani wiped his forehead he was bleeding

Mom: "put that gun down now monwabisi" dad lowered his gun slowly until it was completely down uncle vuyani also put his down they both looked at each other then sat down

Dad: "you still punch like a bitch" they both laughed we looked at them confused

Me: "let get out of here" I whispered in her ear she nodded we started walking just as we were about to get out someone cleared their throat

Dad: "where in the hell do you think you going?!"

Vuyani: "come sit down!!" We slowly walked to the couch and sat down mom went to sit next to dad he kissed her head aunty Sne sat next to uncle vuyani "I'm sorry zama I didn't mean to push especially for you to fall" mom nodded they all looked at us Sihle looked down I looked away

Dad: "is she not your little sister? Isn't that how you were raised? As a family"

Me; "I'm sorry"

Vuyani: "don't fucking apologize answer the questions!"

Sne: "please don't swear and calm down" she kept wiping his forehead

Sihle: "we love each other" uncle vuyani threw a cushion at her hard she fell back on the couch

Vuyani: "what do you know about love?! The only thing you should be loving are those white rabbits you made me buy at home"

Sihle: "I'm not a kid daddy!!"

Sne: "vuyani control your daughter or I will kill her with my hands"

Mom: "can we all just calm down? And wena nosihle watch how you talk to us we not your friends"

Me: "we sorry it just happened but I love her I've always loved her"

Sne: "she's a kid. Your little sister"

Sihle: "we not even related" her father stood up so fast coming to her dad pulled him back

Vuyani: "I will break your bones nosihle do you hear me!! I will break them myself"

Me: "can you not have an attitude please"

Sihle: "sorry just that he hit you Marcel your face looks bad"

Me: "I can handle it just stop" she looked down after nodding "we really sorry I know it wrong and Sbani made it w...."

Sne: "Sbani?"

Sihle: "the baby we named him Sbanisethu Sothando James" uncle vuyani chuckled in irritation

Vuyani: "the disrespect!! You gonna give my grandson your surname without even paying damages"

Dad: "really vuyani his a James mos what's money got to do with it"

Vuyani: "it's the principle of it this boy .." he shook his head "I want damages and a cow for her virginity I want a live cow not money"

Dad: "you gonna put it on a jet back to the state?"

Vuyani: "what I do with it is none of your business" dad shook his head

Dad: "so unreasonable"

Vuyani: "I want my money and my cow boy" I looked at dad he shrugged his shoulders

Me: "okay"

Vuyani: "I want it now"

Mom: "leave my son alone Vuyani"

Dad: "this is men business zama"

Mom: "don't even start with me monwabisi"

Vuyani: "on a serious note this end now you two are done"

Sihle: "daddy no!"

Me: "with all due respect we saying no to that. We love each other and you can't separate us you just can't"

Dad: "we were not asking we telling you" I shook my head

Me: "please don't do this please"

Dad: "it already done"

Me; "mama please I love her I'll die please" I went on my knees

Sihle: "we shouldn't have came back"

Sne: "nosihle don't talk like that"

Me: "please I'll do anything please I'm sorry that she fell pregnant I'm sorry we ran away please punish me anyway but don't take her away from me don't take them away from me please" I couldn't stop my tears

Sihle: "daddy please I won't survive without him please"

Me: "I'll do anything please"

Mom: "we sorry Marcel but it for the best"

Sihle: "I'll kill myself" she took a piece of glass on the floor "I'll cut my vein I swear if you don't let us be together"

Sne: "don't be crazy Nosihle" she pressed the glass on her wrist

Sihle: "I'll do it" I stood up

Me: "don't do that sihle"

Sihle: "they won't let us be together, we shouldn't have came back"

Mom: "maybe when you older you can be together" she started cutting her wrist her dad flew to her and smacked the glass out of her hand but she had already cut herself even though it was not deep

Vuyani: "are you crazy nosihle?!!"

Sihle: "force us apart I'll do it dad you can't watch me 24/7 I'll be alone and I'll end my life"

Sne: "Sihle sweety it what good for you"

Sihle: "he is what's good for me"

Dad: "is it so bad that they together?"

Vuyani: "yes!!"

Dad: "would you rather she be with someone who will play her? You know Marcel would never do her wrong"

Vuyani: "stay out of this Brian!!"

Dad: "she's my daughter too"

Vuyani: "tell your son to stay away from my little girl Brian"

Me: "I'm sorry but I can't and I will not"

Vuyani: "boy I will kill!"

Sihle: "then you will bury three people I'll kill Sbani then kill myself"

Sne: "don't talk like that sihle please"

Sihle: "it the truth" she held my hand squeezing it

Me: "we not letting go of each other" they all looked at us in disbelief this was it we were fighting for each other they had to see we not prepared to live without each other uncle vuyani walked to us looking furious mom stood up

Mom: "dare touch my son Vuyani I'll kill you myself. I dare you!!" Granny got in carrying Sbani dad uncle vuyani quickly hid their guns she looked at all of us then around the lounge shaking her head the lounge was a mess both dad and uncle vuyani were bruised on their faces

Granny: "who was fighting?"

Mom: "no one mom"

Granny: "everyone sit down" we all sat down so did she Sihle went to take Sbani and came back to sit next to me I looked at my son he was up sucking his fist I just smiled I looked at Sihle she was also smiling

Me: "that's new"

Sihle: "yeah" uncle vuyani cleared his throat

Granny: "you know I could hear you all upstairs"

Dad: "sorry"

Granny: "zamagcina and you Brian are the last people to give these kids a hard time, I don't know you about you vuyani and Sne I don't know what you went through and who you had to fight to be together but I doubt you had no one to fight" no one said anything "do you want to lose them? You want them to run away again? We all know if they run again you won't find them be glad they decided to come back. I will not lose my grandchildren and my great grandson because you four are stubborn"

Mom: "mom you have to understand"

Granny: "zamagcina what did you do when your father didn't want you being with Brian" mom didn't say anything "didn't you go and move in with him then married him without your family knowing" I looked at mom in shock

Mom: "that was different Sihle is a kid"

Granny: "she's someone's mother"

Sne: "She's 15 she made a mistake it doesn't not mean she's grown"

Granny: "how long have you been together"

Sihle: "two years in July" the parents gasped

Vuyani: "how did we miss this?"

Dad: "Sihle is a child If you two love each other as you claim you do you will still love each other when she turns 18 and can date" I shook my head "my word is final if you try this sneaking around you've been doing they will be hell to pay. You think Vuyani's punches are bad son I will rough you up if you even as to touch her like she's your girlfriend" mom brushed his back she was nodding there was silence just sihle's sniffs and soft cries

Me: "okay"

Sihle: "okay?" She looked at me in disbelief "you don't love me anymore?"

Me: "baby .. uhm I mean Sihle you know I love you I've loved you for years you will see these years will fly" she shook her head I wiped her tears "we will talk about this when we alone"

Sihle: "okay"

Sne: "can I see him Sihle" I took Sbani gave him to aunty Sne "his so pretty"

Mom: "I know right! He looks like a girl"

Vuyani: "can't believe I'm a grandpa at this age"

Dad: "calm yourself you 54"

Vuyani: "I look half my age" I stood up pulled Sihle up we went to my room we got under the cover I pulled her to me she just cried louder

Sihle: "you said you will fight for us"

Me: "baby they won't let us be together just wait for me just like I'll wait for you it only basically two years it will fly by you will see and when we can be together we going to be stronger than before I love you nosihle you know that we will work you will see"

Sihle: "don't lie to me you will move on Marcel I know you will" I moved her face from my chest and kissed her

Me: "do you trust me?" She nodded I smiled and kissed her again "we going to make it and we going to be great one day we will get married have more babies give Sbani sisters you will see"

Sihle: "you will wait for me"

Me: "yes because I love you so much and you sbani's mom" she smiled

Sihle: "okay I love you"

Me: "I love you too" we kissed

.

#Amelia

*

*

I don't know how this was going to work I could sit and hope that dad won't check my whereabouts but chances were he was going to check them especially since it was the weekend so I had no option but to call mom

Mom: "hello" I heard a baby crying my nephew was staying at home Marcel was back at school and Sihle was back in the state

Me: "is that Sbani?"

Mom: "yes just wait" she shouted for the nanny to take him "yes"

Me: "I have to go to Sphe's home for the funeral" she sighed

Mom: "when are you planning to tell your father you dating you and Sphe been together for so long"

Me: "his scared of dad"

Mom: "I'm getting tired of keeping this from your father having to lie to him whenever he asks if you dating Amelia you know I don't lie to my husband tell him or I will I swear between you and your brother I'll have a heart attack"

Me: "mom please I'll tell him just please do this for me just this weekend"

Mom: "when are you leaving?"

Me: "I'm waiting for Sphe to come pick me up he should be here any moment from now"

Mom: "I see"

Me: "I love you mom"

Mom: "yeah whatever bye" I giggled as she dropped the call I finished up packing then went to sit in the lounge waiting for Sphe.

Sphe: "babe" I rushed out of my room

Me: "hey" we hugged he kissed my head "how you feeling" he shrugged his shoulders "you going to be okay"-

Sphe: "I guess I mean she was old so it was expected"

Me: "still doesn't make it right"

Sphe: "let's go" I stood on my toes and kissed him he held my waist we kissed for a long time I pulled back when his erection started pressing on me

Me: "I love you"

Sphe: "I love you more" he took my suitcase we left got in his car drove off went past the garage for snacks and drinks then started the long road to Kzn.

I guess I fell asleep because I was woken up by Sphe kissing me all over my face

Me: "hey"

Sphe: "come so we can buy something to eat" I nodded and held his cheeks we kissed

Me: "why does kissing has to lead to sex with you" he chuckled

Sphe: "it been awhile"

Me: "I was with you Monday don't lie"

Sphe: "everything about you turns me on even talking" he kissed my neck "especially touching and licking" he bit my earlobe "not forgetting kissing" I pushed him off me giggling

Me: "just feed me" we got off the car went to steers ordered then went to the toilets I did my business I found him waiting for me when I was done

Sphe: "was starting to think you were shitting in there"

Me: "I was not! I didn't take that long" he kissed my forehead

Sphe: "I'm joking" we went to get our order went back to the car he drove off.

When we got to dumisa it was already night time

Sphe: "come in with me if I'm alone mom will shout at me for coming this late"

Me: "good because I told you I could skip my class and we could leave in the morning"

Sphe: "it done now come" we got off the car the yard was buzzing with people he took my hand we looked at each other smiling then walked he kept on being stopped by people greeting him some asking for cool drink money until we got in the main house we greeted went straight to the kitchen his mom loved the kitchen and she was a really good cook

Sphe: "mom"

Yammy: "you late. You like driving at night sphelele I don't know what's wrong with you" she turned to look at us and smiled "Amelia baby hi" we hugged "thank you for coming"

Me: "how are you?" She smiled weakly

Yammy: "it was her time she's at peace now"

Sphe: "at least she didn't get sick" his granny passed in her sleep

Yammy: "go to your brothers leave us alone"

Sphe: "I'm talking my woman with me"

Yammy: "Sphe" he walked out laughing "that boy" we laughed I greeted the rest of the wives in the kitchen "sit I'll dish up for you and Sphe we already ate"

Me: "thanks" I sat down "can I help" they were chopping some veges I had never chopped before but it couldn't be that hard

Yammy: "we okay these drunkards will do it" insults were thrown at her she just laughed she gave me the plates I went out found Sphe sitting with his siblings and cousins

Sphe: "came to feed your man" I nodded

Me: "yeah I'd hate for you to lose weight"

Liam: "can you even cook princess?"

Sphe: "even if she couldn't I work I'd hire a chef for her" they all laughed he pulled me to sit on his lap

Sbo: "you can just tell she's not domesticated"

Sphe: "never judge a book by it cover"

Hope: "leave Amelia alone focus on your own girlfriends clowns"

Thobe: "Mrs Van Waal has spoken"

Hope: "yes recognize" we laughed

Sphe: "we gonna spend an hour at vigil then go to sleep I'm tired and I have to be up early tomorrow"

Me: "okay"

Sphe: "hope you brought those handcuffs" he whispered then softly bit my neck I shook my head "mmh"

Me: "you so addicted to sex" he smiled and winked we joined in the conversation that everyone was having I'd catch Liam looking at me from time to time.

.

I woke up in the morning alone in bed I sat up and rubbed my wrists he tied me with his tie that he was going to wear today during the funeral I got off the bed wore my pjs made the bed I opened the windows put on my slippers I went to the main house found Thando and Nosi making breakfast

Me: "hey"

Them: "morning Mrs khumalo" I giggled and sat on the hire chair Nosi gave me a cup of coffee

Me: "your brother hasn't even proposed"

Thando: "would you say yes though if he did?"

Me: "no not yet I'm only doing my 2nd year my parents would freak out"

Nosi: "he speaks a lot about marrying you"

Me: "I know, his not ready though" they looked at each other " his not done with being a player he might be behaving for now but I can tell"

Thando: "oh well we don't know the ins of your relationship" Hope got in with her husband they greeted

Hope: "I'm starving"

Nosi: "pregnant again?"

Hope: "I'm house wife I'm always pregnant" we laughed Olwam got in

Olwam: "family"

Us: "hey"

Thando: "shouldn't you two be with the wives"

Olwam: "we grandchildren that's mom's territory we get all wifey like in Durban" I chuckled

Me: "I'm not married yet so I'm good"

Nosi: "hhe these kids"

Olwam: "let not forget that I'm older than you"

Thando: "ooh don't start with us" we laughed she said it with an indian accent.

I looked at myself on the mirror I was in a tight fitting below the knee medium sleeve black dress and navy heels my short weave left lose

Sphe: "you look good babe" he kissed my neck he had came back to bath and get ready he was in a navy suit with black shoes and belt

Me: "I think everyone else has left you made us late" he smiled and held my chin tilting my head we kissed

Sphe: "I love you" he took my navy bag gave it to me we left going to the community hall I was driving because Sphe was eating he had skipped breakfast he kept directing me until we got there we got off and went in

Me: "is that your bmw love?" He looked at the car I was point and muttered a curse

Sphe: "we need to talk" Hope was already waving for us to come

Me: "later" we walked to her went in

Hope: "you late" she whispered we went to sit where the rest of the family was sitting the service went well when it was done we went to the house for lunch I helped out with dishing I thought my eyes were deceiving me when Snakho came to me with an empty plate she smiled widely Olwam was standing next to me she pinched me I gave a fake smile

Snakho: "hey"

Me: "hi" I took her plate dished up the green salad I was serving

Snakho: "where is Sphe I can't see him his phone is off"

Olwam: "you holding up the line move along" she rolled her eyes and left "I hate that girl she thinks Sphe is an atm"

Me: "she wouldn't think that if he didn't give her that impression" we continued until we got done I went to look for Sphe I found him in the corner of the house hugging Snakho he had his back on so she could see me she smiled and put her fingers through his hair I just turned and walked away

Insert 14

^

^

#Amelia

*

*

I went to where the girls were

Hope: "you gave my brother his food?" I smiled shaking my head she pouted

Me: "why don't you take it to him?"

Hope: "I'm tired" they laughed I rolled my eyes and dished up for Sphe from the food that was ours

Me: "I'll be back" I went back to where I had found them they were talking "hey" he looked at me with his eyes all out and held my hand

Sphe: "babe I know what you thinking but it not as it seems" I just giggled shaking my head

Me: "have you eaten? I brought you lunch"

Sphe: "Amelia baby"

Me: "take the food and eat babe I'm also hungry I want to go eat" he took the plate

Sphe: "thank you" I gave him a soft peck and turned "Amelia" I looked at him he held my chin and leaned in we kissed deeply I pulled back first and turned walked away he followed me putting his arm around my back I looked back at Snakho she looked furious I just smiled at her "will you let me explain"

Me: "later"

Sphe: "I'm sorry" I nodded he kissed my head we were about to go our separate way when I stopped and looked at him

Me: "not having an ex to throw all over your face doesn't mean I don't have guys asking me" he held my wrist roughly "ouch!" He sank his nails in "you hurting me sphe let go of me" His father wasn't far from us he walked to us and pushed him off

Nzuzo: "what are you doing? You out of your mind boy?" He quickly let go and walked away "are you okay Amelia?" I nodded I felt like crying

Me: "yes I'm fine"

Nzuzo: "is he aggressive with you?"

Me: "no his not I don't know what just happened"

Nzuzo: "don't lie for him"

Me: "I'm not lying, please excuse me" my voice was trembling I was trying so hard to not cry he took my hand and walked away I had no choice but to follow him we went to the main house straight to the kitchen Yammy was there feeding Hope's child

Nzuzo: "fix this" Yammy looked at us

Me: "it nothing really"

Yammy: "what wrong sweetie? You look like you about..." I just cried she stood up fast "hey hey don't do that don't ruin your make up" she gave me a hug I wanted to just wail but I controlled myself even though I couldn't stop my tears from falling

Me: "I'm fine really"

Yammy: "no you not. Is it because Snakho is here? I saw her earlier"-

Me: "no it's not" we pulled apart she wiped my tears

Yammy: "talk to me, what did that stupid boy do?"

Me: "it really nothing he just held me a little tightly it not a big deal please"

Yammy: "does he hit you?"

Me: "no his not like that" he got in the kitchen running

Sphe: "babe?" He pulled me to him and wrapped his arms around me "I'm sorry okay I don't know what happened back there" he kissed my head repeatedly until we pulled apart "I'm sorry Vuyolwam"

Me: "I need to rest Sphe"

Sphe: "okay let's go"

Yammy: "will you be back for dinner? We need to talk sphelele"

Sphe: "yeah" he held my hand we walked out got in his car he drove out "did you eat?"

Me: "I'm not hungry" he turned and drove back he parked the car and rushed off after awhile he came back with a plate of food put it on my lap and drove off again. I threw myself on the bed as soon as we got in he rolled me over to lay on my back and took off my shoes and started massaging my feet

Sphe: "I'm sorry my love"

Me: "what is she doing here? Did she come with your car?" He sighed

Sphe: "she was in my life for a long time yes I never brought her here up until the funeral actually I don't know why she came here I was surprised when I saw the car she didn't tell me she's coming but she said she wants to show support" he looked at me as if expecting me to say something but I didn't say anything he wiped his face "I borrowed her the car" I stood up took my dress off I took wipes cleaned my face and got in bed "won't you say something Amelia?"

Me: "it your car Sphe, your family and your ex it all has nothing to do with me. I'm just a fool who is in love with you everyone who knows that's your car that your ex is driving is thinking I'm a fool and maybe they pity me like I'm a sad person. I got nothing to say Sphe just continue putting a third person in our relationship when I put a fourth you better have nothing to say" I pulled the cover over my head

Sphe: "baby don't talk like that" I just shut my mouth "love" still nothing "baby marn" he tried pulling the cover I held it tightly "Amelia! Baby can we talk" he laid next to me on top of the cover "baby I'm sorry about everything I am really sorry Vuyolwam"

I guess I fell asleep while he was apologizing because I woke up when he was shaking me I opened my eyes he was staring at me also under the cover he kissed my nose I closed my eyes he put his leg between mine

Sphe: "even after sleeping you still mad at me"

Me: "leave me alone Sphe"

Sphe: "you have to eat the others just came back they brought our dinner you can sleep after eating"

Me: "I don't want to eat"

Sphe: "I let you skip lunch but you have to eat Amelia sit up" I opened my eyes he gave me a soft peck I pushed him

Me: "maybe you even kissed her I saw how cosy you two were her fingers all up in your hair, I'm the one who told you to cut your hair like this I don't want anybody touching it" he smiled and nodded

Sphe: "I didn't kiss her and I'm sorry about the hair" I sat up so did he we started eating "I am really sorry Amelia"

Me: "you going to lose me Sphe and you will have no one to blame but yourself if you don't stop this"

Sphe: "but baby I didn't do anything"

Me: "it actually scares me more that you can't realise how you messing us up" he looked down and started playing with his food

Sphe: "I don't want to lose you baby"

Me: "funny considering how you not scared of losing me"

Sphe: "it my worst fear"

Me: "could have fooled me"

Sphe: "I love you Amelia" I rolled my eyes he held my cheeks pressing them together "I love you!" He smiled I just shook my head we kissed

Me: "I love you"

.

#Marcel

*

*

I ignored whoever was knocking but they wouldn't go away

Me: "yeah I'm coming!!" I got off the couch went to the door as soon as I opened I was welcomed by a hot slap I shook my head and stared at her in disbelief "what the fuck?!!"

Tracy: "when were you going to tell me?"

Me: "tell you what?" She pushed me aside and got in I closed the door followed her to the lounge I sat down and watched her pacing up and down

Tracy: "I loved you Marcel! Hell I still love you I've loved you for years I gave myself to you and this is how you do me you make your little sister pregnant"

Me: "she's not my little sister"

Tracy: "she is. Just because you not blood related doesn't mean she's not"

Me: "Tracy you came all the way to the Cape from Jozi to shout at me? Tracy I'm sorry if I hurt you"

Tracy: "if? You did hurt me Marcel a lot. Why would you do this to me?"

Me: "sit down Tracy let's talk in a civil manner" she sat down I pulled her to me "I'm sorry Tracy" she just wailed I pulled her to my lap wrapped my arms around her body she pressed her face on my chest "I am so sorry Tracy I should have been upfront about everything with you"

Tracy: "it hurts Marcel I've always loved you!!" I kissed her head

Me: "I know I'm sorry" she looked up at me

Tracy: "you love her?"

Me: "Tracy"

Tracy: "you do don't you?"

Me: "yes I do but I love you as well" I didn't want to hurt her any further

Tracy: "then why couldn't you just commit to me"

Me: "I don't know" she pressed her lips on mine we kissed she turned and straddled me

Tracy: "Marcel"

Me: "mmh"

Tracy: "I love you, are you still with her?"

Me: "no"

Tracy: "can we focus on us?"

Me: "you forgive me?" She nodded I raised my eyebrow i couldn't understand how she just going to forgive but then I couldn't figure out where I went wrong I don't ever remember giving her an impression that we committed to each other yeah sure she was the only girl I was ever with besides Sihle she's my first I always knew she was in love with me but my heart just has never been with her

Tracy: "I love you Marcel I really do sometimes I wish I didn't then I wouldn't be looking and acting like a fool"

Me: "I love you too Trac and I am sorry I've been treating you so badly I don't know what's wrong with me" she cupped my cheeks

Tracy: "you gonna try to make us work?"

Me: "I don't want to hurt you Tracy"

Tracy: "you won't hurt me I know you won't" she kissed me I pulled back and looked at her in the eyes she wasn't listening to me I was saying something and she was hearing something different

Me: "Trac.." she put her finger on my lips

Tracy: "I've missed you" she pulled my bottom lip between her teeth and kissed me I kissed her back she moved back and took off her top we went back to kissing I stood up walked to my room with her legs wrapped around my waist I gently put her on the bed and moved getting between her legs I looked down at her she just smiled sweetly

Me: "Tracy maybe we shouldn't"

Tracy: "I love you I want us to do this" she took off my t-shirt and ran her nails down my stomach my body shivered I hadn't had sex in months Sihle hadn't wanted us to be intimate once she turned 7 months it made her uncomfortable so we stopped.

.

I woke up in bed alone I got off the bed wore my pj bottom went to the bathroom I washed my face brushed my teeth got out I took my phone called mom

Mom: "Marcel"

Me: "morning mom"

Mom: "are you well?"

Me: "yes. How's Sbani? Did he sleep well?"

Mom: "his good slept okay his still asleep"

Me: "will you facetime me when his up"

Mom: "okay I will, when are you coming home?"

Me: "the coming weekend I miss him"

Mom: "okay we will see you then" we ended the call I went out found Tracy in the kitchen making breakfast while singing along to a song that was playing on the tv wearing my pj top I held her waist bringing her to me she smiled brightly

Me: "morning beautiful"

Tracy: "morning baby" we kissed "hope you hungry because I'm making you breakfast I got scones baking"

Me: "mmh no wonder it smells so good in here"

Tracy: "sit" she gave me a soft peck I poured myself coffee then sat on the high chair watched moving around the kitchen looking so sexy "I can feel your eyes on my ass" I chuckled

Me: "you love my eyes on your ass" she turned to look at me giggling

Tracy: "yeah I do" I winked at her she giggled louder "wanna take me out?"

Me: "yeah we can catch a movie and dinner. Did you drive here?"

Tracy: "I flew I'm gonna have to book a flight for Tuesday my classes start on Wednesday"

Me: "so I'm gonna be going to campus and coming back to a home cooked meal" she rolled her eyes she walked to me stood between my legs she put her hand in my hair

Tracy: "doesn't your maid cook for you" I had a maid coming three times a week she cooked for me and kept the food frozen

Me: "I do miss your cooking" she smiled

Tracy: "I'll cook for you" we kissed I grabbed her ass bringing her closer she moaned and pulled back "let me dish up" she gave me a soft peck and moved from me "I love you Marcel"

Me: "I love you too baby" she smiled and went back to the stove my phone rang it was Sihle I stood up walked to the lounge "Nosihle"

Sihle: "hey"

Me: "why are you up at this time?"

Sihle: "was skyping with Brianna and Sbanisethu"

Me: "alright"

Sihle: "I miss you Marcel"

Me: "Sihle you going to get us in trouble you not even supposed to be calling me if uncle vuyani finds my number on your statement there's going to be trouble"

Sihle: "you really don't love me anymore do you"

Me: "don't do this Sihle"

Sihle: "I love you"

Me: "I know so do I"

Tracy: "food is ready" she kissed my cheek and put everything on the coffee table

Sihle: "who is that Marcel? You've moved on already"

Me: "maybe you should also do that" I dropped the call

Tracy: "who was that?" I sat next to her kissed her cheek

Me: "no one important babe" we started eating

.

#Nosihle

*

*

I had cried for hours I didn't even sleep I had heard her voice loud and clear but I hoped he would lie and make up some excuse instead of just being truthful like that how can he just expect me to move on as if my heart didn't belong to him someone knocked I knew it was one of the maids waking me up for church

Her: "Sihle!"

Me: "go away" I covered myself with the blanket and cried louder I felt as if someone punched my heart hard I knew this was going to happen but he promises me it wouldn't he promised me he wouldn't move on he will wait until our parents are okay with us dating I heard the door opening after awhile the bed moved someone pulled the blanket off my head I looked up it was mom

Mom: "princess. What's wrong? Sit up" I did she circled her arms around me "what did Marcel do?"

Me: "who said it him" she kissed my head and wiped my tears even though they wouldn't stop coming

Mom: "I know his the only who would make you cry now tell me what did he do"

Me: "he moved on Mon his with someone I heard the girl in the background when I called him and he said I should move on too. How can he do that to me? he knows how I love him" she sighed

Mom: "why are you calling him nosihle? You were told that you two shouldn't be communicated"

Me: "I love him! I love him mom I can't control my heart I just can't"

Mom: "baby I'm sorry you hurting but Marcel isn't the one for you" I got off the arms

Me: "please leave my room"

Mom: "nosihle"

Me: "mom please"

Mom: "this is for your own good"

Me: "this is your fault! You and dad you made us break up now look he has someone else and I'm left alone with my heart broken"

Mom: "we your parents we know what's good for you"

Me: "what good is us breaking up when I'm like this mom? Do my tears make you happy?!!!" I got off the bed went to the door I opened it "leave my room leave me alone"

Mom: "nosihle don't be like this"

Me: "leave my room!!!" She stood up walked closer to me tried touching me I moved back "don't touch me mother"

Mom: "stop doing this to yourself"

Me: "this is all your fault! You know how madly in love I am with him yet you did this and now you happy instead of comforting me you saying it a good thing you my mother my happiness is supposed to be your priority but you would rather have me like this you love that he has moved on it makes you happy Snehlanhla my tears make you happy I hate yo.." I was cut off by a hard slap from Sfundu his eyes were blazing with anger I looked at mom she was crying

Sfundu: "enough Nosihle!!!"

Me: "you hit me"

Sfundu: "and I'll gladly do it again if you continue acting like this. Who gave you right to speak to mom like this? You behaving like this over a boy! Have you lost your dang mind?!"

Mom: "it's okay Sfundu let her speak her mind clearly Marcel is more important than her own mother"

Dad: "what's with the noise I can hear you all the way to bottom floor" he looked at me "why is she crying? Who hit you Nosihle? Why is your cheek like that?"

Me: "Sfundu hit me"

Dad: "are you out of your mind Sfundu?!"

Sfundu: "I'll do it again if she continues disrespecting mom just because Marcel decided to move on" he walked out mom followed him

Dad: "it a good thing he moved on Nosihle but I'm sorry you hurting princess I wish there was a way I could shield you from hurting you too pure and loving to be crying over a guy. Please don't fight with your mother we just want what is best for you and right now Marcel isn't it I understand you feel as if everyone is against you but we not" he pulled me to his chest we hugged "know that we all love you you still a kid be happy do things that kids do Brianna will be going to summer music camp I'll sign you up go have fun with people your age I'm not saying forget about Marcel you won't be able to you two have a baby together his your first love I know it hard to get over those things when you a girl but it will all work out you will see" I sniffed

Me: "you promise it will get better" he kissed my head

Dad: "I promise princess you will see just trust your daddy"

Me: "okay"

Dad: "I love you princess"

Me: "I love you daddy"

Dad: "you will be just fine ma'Ngcobo you your father's daughter you strong this will pass and you will be happy" he kissed my head

.

#Amelia

*

*

I was watching tv with Sbani laying on my stomach I was at home for September holidays Brianna and Sihle were cuddling on the couch Marcel was out things between him and Sihle were so weird he was officially dating Tracy. Marcel came in whistling playing with his car keys he sat next to me and took Sbani

Marcel: "my beautiful son"

Sihle: "mxm" we all looked at her she was just bitter towards Marcel

Marcel: "is he not my son?"

Me: "can you two not start Jesus" I sat up

Sihle: "his just so arrogant"

Marcel: "whatever" I rolled my eyes

Brianna: "Marcel"

Marcel: "angel"

Brianna: "please stop fighting with Sihle it not nice you being mean" I chuckled

Marcel: "I'm sorry I didn't notice I was being mean"

Mom: "who is being mean" she sat down carrying Madison

Brianna: "Marcel is being mean to Sihle mama"

Mom: "Marcel?!"

Marcel: "mama"

Mom: "what I said about treating Sihle right"

Marcel: "sorry"

Brianna: "is dada on his way I'm hungry now"

Mom: "he is on his way angel go check if the table is set" Brianna stood up going to the dining room as daddy got in carrying a box of red roses with a smile on his face mom just giggled

Dad: "hey baby" he held her chin and they kissed shortly "beautiful roses for my beautiful flower"

Mom: "I love them thank you baby"

Dad: "I love you" they kissed again

Brianna: "dada" they pulled apart Brianna was smiling brightly dad took out one rose and walked towards her shaking his head

Dad: "a rose for my beautiful angel" Brianna giggled and took the rose

Brianna: "I love it I love you" she threw her arms at him they hugged he kissed her head

Dad: "I love you too Brianna"

Mom: "let's eat" we all stood up walked to the dining area where we had dinner over light conversation after dinner I went to my room took a shower got in my pjs went to bed I called Sphe

Sphe: "my love my heart my joy my everything" I couldn't help but giggle

Me: "baby"

Sphe: "just baby?"

Me: "aah Ethan" he groaned

Sphe: "I hate that name"

Me: "I love it"

Sphe: "whatever my love"

Me: "how you feeling about tomorrow?"

Sphe: "nervous as hell I hope your father doesn't hit me" he was coming over for lunch tomorrow to meet my family

Me: "he won't mom won't let me just don't worry dad will love you" he chuckled

Sphe: "I doubt he will love me he might be forced to tolerate me but loving me mmh a.a"

Me: "you love me and you make me happy he will love you" we continued talking for hours then I went to sleep.

.

I woke up in the morning to a text from Sphe saying how he misses waking up next to me that his erection agrees with him. I just laughed getting off the bed I went to brush my teeth washed my face and went down found Sihle and Marcel eating cereal in silence I greeted made myself cereal sat down we all just ate in silence until Marcel's phone rang

Marcel: "babe" he answered getting out of the kitchen I looked at Sihle she quickly wiped her tear

Me: "don't let it get to you"

Sihle: "I'm fine" she gave me a weak smile before getting off the chair and walking out I finished my cereal went to watch tv while chatting.

I kept looking outside waiting for Sphe to pull up in the driveway he had already called saying his by the gate

Me: "dada remember you promised to be nice"

Dad: "I don't remember that"

Me: "dada!" Mom giggled she had her arms around dad's waist leaning on his shoulder

Dad: "amelia I'm meeting the boy what more do you want from a black man"

Me: "just remember that I love him and he loves me" his car parked I opened the door we were waiting by the foyer he got out the car looking dropped dead handsome he was carrying a bunch of flowers and a bottle of wine he smiled nervously as he got closer to us

Sphe: "Mr James Mrs James hello"

Mom: "hi Sphe" he showed his hand for a handshake from dad instead of shaking his hand dad punched him in his face he stumbled back before falling

Insert 15

^

^

#Amelia

*

*

Me: "dada!!" I knelt next to Sphe but he quickly stood up and dusted himself off dad tries to hit him again he ducked "mom!"

Mom: "Brian stop it"

Dad: "who are you? What you doing in my house?"

Me: "dada!!" I was already in tears

Sphe: "I'm sorry Mr James if I'm coming across as disrespectful" dad threw another punch at him I started a crying loudly as Sphe hit the floor again

Mom: "monwabisi enough now!" He pulled Sphe up just as the door opened Bandile and bayanda got in

Bandile: "ooh the party started already" I felt like crying even louder Sphe's lip was bleeding

Me: "mama!!!"

Mom: "okay okay Amelia go clean up Sphe"

Bayanda: "in whose bathroom?"

Dad: "whose house?" Mom shot them a look I took Sphe's hand pulled him upstairs to my room we went straight to the bath

Me: "sit" he did I started cleaning him up while sniffing I was still crying

Sphe: "don't cry baby it okay I understand" I shook my head wiped my snot with the back of my hand

Me: "I can't believe daddy just hit you like that for no reason Sphe" he pulled me to him I just cried louder I even had hiccups he held me tightly around my waist

Sphe: "don't cry baby you know what your tears do to me please don't cry not for me my beautiful Amelia" I looked down at him held his face leaned down we kissed I was busy sniffing during the kiss until we pulled apart

Me: "I love you"

Sphe: "I love you too" we finished up went downstairs found everyone in the lounge having drinks my stupid brothers were laughing at whatever Sphe and I sat down

Mom: "what would you like to drink"

Me: "he drinks beer Sol"

Bayanda: "there's a liquor store 20 minutes from here go buy it"

Me: "you not being funny bayanda you really not and shouldn't you be at your house with your wife and kids" he chuckled

Bandile: "why you upset princess?" He was being sarcastic

Me: "why you here?!"

Marcel: "what's wrong princess?" I rolled my eyes they laugh

Mom: "boys stop it. Amelia go get Sphe his beer" I shot my brothers a look before standing up I went to the kitchen got his beer and poured myself a glass of juice went back to the lounge found them staring at Sphe while he looked down mom was texting on her phone

Bandile: "you work?"

Bayanda: "if two punches knock you down like that how you going to protect our little sister?"

Me: "why does he have to be violent like you"

Dad: "he doesn't have to but we need to know that he can protect you"

Marcel: "right now it like he can't"

Me: "shut up Marcel"

Sphe: "I work at eskom in technical at komati"

Bandile: "is that your only source of income?"

Me: "it not about the money and he has it lot of it"

Dad: "it bad enough that he can't protect he doesn't need to be broke as well" I sighed

Sphe: "I work Mr James it's a good job and my family has money I grew up in it. I'm not a violent person that should be a good thing because I'll never raise my hand at Vuyolwethu but I would die protecting her if it comes to it" mom smiled

Mom: "I love that you call her Vuyolwethu"

Dad: "boy hitting my daughter should be the last thing on your mind because I would kill you in a heartbeat you wouldn't be able to hide from me believe me I'm not making those stupid meaningless threats that people make I would kill you using my own hands I wouldn't even use my gun" he took it out of his waist

Mom: "Brian put that thing away! And what did I tell you about carrying a gun in the house? We have babies in this house for God sakes"

Dad: "just getting my point across"

Sphe: "I would never hurt her like that"

Bandile: "you will never hurt her period boy whether emotional or physical dare she cry because of you mmh you will see what it like to upset a James man"

Bayanda: "you see we have what they call blackout moments when we get upset"

Bandile: "our blackouts are caused by anger so we will fuck you up you will probably end up in hospital if not dead because we won't even realise that you already fucked up so we will just can't continue beating you up until you passed out"

Me: "he gets it now please stop" Lisa and Penny had told me how it went when they introduced their boyfriends to my brothers and dad but I didn't think it would be like this I could tell Sphe was scared it didn't help that they looked like they really would beat someone to death worse daddy looked like a professional wrestler

Sphe: "it's okay baby"

Marcel: "baby? isn't that cute!" They laughed

Me: "shut up Marcel"

Sphe: "I love Vuyolwethu I've loved her for years I'll continue loving her for years to come she's my happiness my heart I'll do anything and everything to see her always smiling because her smile and laughter gives meaning to my life she loves me for me not for what I can offer her hurting her would kill me just as losing her so I will always ensure that she's happy. I want to marry her.."

Dad: "woah!!" Dad cut him off "no one is marrying anyone here I'll cut your balls son" my brothers laughed dad was panicking he was even standing pointing his finger at Sphe with his eyes closed

Mom: "calm down Brian"

Sphe: "I'm not saying now Mr James she's not ready yet she doesn't want to marry me yet and I'll wait for her"

Dad: "you better be ready to wait for a decade" mom pulled him down giggling

Mom: "you can't make her stop growing Brian"

Dad: "don't start with me magcina"

Mom: "there's still Brianna and Madison"

Dad: "zamagcina" mom was still giggling dad had turned red "it bad enough that we allowing her to date at her age"

Me: "I'm 19"

Dad: "you still 18" I rolled my eyes

Mom: "amelia!"

Me: "sorry" Thembeke got in

Thembeke: "lunch is set outside"

Mom: "thank you Thembeke" she smiled and walked out dad stood up and offered his hand at mom helping her stand up he kissed her head

Dad: "did I tell you how beautiful you look today my wife"

Mom: "I could hear it again" she giggled at they walked out dad spanked her ass she squealed my brothers followed after them so did we

Sphe: "your parents look like kids" I laughed we got outside sat down "you have a beautiful house Mrs James the view is amazing"

Mom: "thank you sphe but you know you can just call me zama"

Sphe: "zama" she smiled Sihle and Brianna came to the table laughing and sat down I saw Marcel looking at Sihle with a frown on his face she looked at him and rolled her eyes he looked down sighing softly we all started dishing up for ourselves the Smith boys were paddling on the lake Brianna waved as they shouted her name Sihle giggled

Brianna: "they so stupid"

Sihle: "I know right"

Marcel: "can we have lunch in peace without you two talking and giggling like foolish kids"

Mom: "Marcel!" He sighed

Marcel: "sorry"

Brianna: "dada"

Dad: "yes my angel"

Brianna: "I'm tired of Marcel his been mean since he got back from school"

Dad: "Marcel"

Marcel: "I said sorry"

Dad: "don't bring your ill manners home"

Marcel: "I'm sorry okay"

Mom: "boy what is wrong with you"

Marcel: "nothing mama"

Bandile: "where is Sbani and Madison"

Mom: "it nap time"

Bandile: "wanna see Sbani before I have to leave"

Sihle: "you will see him his growing up so fast"

Marcel: "and he gets cuter by the day"

Sihle: "yes he does"

Marcel: "just like his daddy" Sihle laughed out loud

Sihle: "debatable" Brianna and mom joined her in laughing we finished lunch over light conversation with Sphe joining in every now and then after lunch we just chilled outside just talking watching Brianna and Sihle play in the lake with the Smith boys

.

#Marcel

*

*

I knew I was frowning and I couldn't keep my eyes from her I hated how that stupid white boy who was our neighbor was looking at her it was making my blood boil and she kept laughing stupidly at whatever they were saying it looked innocent but it was driving me crazy

Bayanda: "relax" he whispered I looked at him with a raised eyebrow "you look like you about to murder the poor boy"

Me: "I'm over her" he laughed causing everyone to look at us, yes I was lying I loved even more than I loved her before we just couldn't be together and she needed to enjoy her life and not be crying over me until she's 18 even if it meant for her hating me for these years One day I would explain to her when asking for forgiveness but for now she had to believe that I was really in love with Tracy

Bayanda: "you that child Marcel it's okay we understand even dad understands it vuyani who is pig headed about the whole situation"

Me: "you know he threatened me with a gun before they left" his eyes popped out

Bayanda: "you told dad?" I shook my head

Me: "no I mean we almost damaged our family this would just add to that but I love her bayanda I really do and it hurts so bad to see her this mad at me"

Bayanda: "why you dating Tracy openly I mean if it sex you need you don't have to be open about being with her"

Me: "Sihle doesn't want to accept that we can't be together right now it was the only way she could accept it" he chuckled

Bayanda: "you so stupid. What if she never forgives you?"

Me: "she loves me"

Bayanda: "she's 15 look at how she's eating up whatever that boy is saying it easy to forget at her age"

Me: "no man I'll get her back when we allowed to be together you will see I know Sihle she loves me as much as I love her"

Bayanda: "I hope you right little brother because if you love her like how I love fezeka and she doesn't take you back you will die I still don't understand how you allowing this break"

Me: "what choice do I have bayanda and I'm done talking about this" he raised his hands

Bayanda: "whatever" he joined in on what everyone else was talking about

Me: "mama"

Mom: "yes baby"

Me: "I'm going out for awhile I'll be back before dinner"

Mom: "okay" I stood up looked at the lake one last time before I went in I went to my room took my phone I had missed calls from Steven and Tracy I called Tracy

Tracy: "hey baby"

Me: "hey"

Tracy: "you didn't answer my call"

Me: "I had left my phone in my room was having lunch"

Tracy: "I miss you I want to come there"

Me: "no I'm coming there" last thing I needed was to make things worse with Sihle by bringing Tracy home when she's here

Tracy: "okay but was hoping to see Amelia as well" she sounded sad

Me: "you will see her tomorrow I'm on my way"

Tracy: "okay" I dropped the call took my car keys went out got in the car drove out took 5 minutes to get to Tracy's home as I got out the car Tracy was getting out the door she jumped on me I held her ass we kissed

Me: "really missed me?"

Tracy: "yes baby" I put her down

Me: "who you with?"

Tracy: "the whole family we were in the cinema" we went in went pass the cinema I greeted then we went to her room I threw her on the bed got between her legs we kissed for a long time then I pulled back gave her a soft peck

Me: "you so beautiful" she blushed

Tracy: "you mean that?"

Me: "you know you beautiful baby"

Tracy: "why didn't you want to come to you? Is it because Sihle is there?" I got off her laid on the bed looking up

Me: "no it's not I was already on my way out" she put her head on my chest and her leg on me

Tracy: "I don't like feeling like this babe"

Me: "like how?"

Tracy: "insecure and all jealous"

Me: "I'm sorry baby is there something I could do"

Tracy: "no it's fine" she took off my t-shirt and started kissing my chest going down I helped her take of my jeans after I kicked off my sneakers "are we just about sex?" I held her arms pulled her up

Me: "you just started taking my clothes off Tracy I didn't initiate anything I love you Tracy I'm with you because I love you sex is just a bonus besides I love making love to you it help us grow stronger and connect more" she giggled nodding

Tracy: "I'm sorry I'm just being silly I'm over emotional these days"

Me: "getting your periods soon?"

Tracy: "actually a week late" I sat up

Me: "is that normal? I mean you did take the morning after that day the condom broke"

Tracy: "I've never been late before but I did take the pill so don't worry about that"

Me: "sit up" she did I held her hands "I love you and I'm happy with you I'm dedicated to you so you have nothing to worry about especially when it comes to my feelings for you and how committed I am to you"

Tracy: "I love you too Marcel I love you so much I've loves you for so long" I chuckled

Me: "I know since forever even when I had braces wearing eye glasses" she laughed and sat on me

Tracy: "and now you my hot hot boyfriend"

Me: "I'm hot?" I raised my eyebrow

Tracy: "you know you hot baby" she gave me a soft peck and pulled my bottom lip biting it "you sexy, hot and smart everything I want plus sex with you so amazing" I laughed

Me: "I'm the only person you've slept with" she giggled rolling her eyes

Tracy: "yeah well in my limited experience you it for me"

Me: "I'm glad your experience is limited but just so you know you it for me as well" she smiled we kissed someone knocked we pulled apart she went to the door it was her brother

Him: "dad and I are going to get dinner, mom said to ask what you want?"

Tracy: "babe you gonna stay for dinner right?"

Me: "yeah"

Tracy: "what do you want?"

Me: "whatever you buying?"

Tracy: "meat?"

Me: "ribs" she nodded

Tracy: "ribs and chops" he nodded and left she locked the door

Me: "strip for me" she gave me a wide smile I stood up connected her iPod to the speaker played music sat back on the bed

Tracy: "you gonna make it rain?" I nodded took out my wallet I had a few notes took them out

Me: "I'll make it rain" we laughed she started stripping and dancing my dick was growing harder with every passing second when she turned around started twerking I felt like pulling her to me so I got off the bed walked to her she pushed me to sit down and gave me a lap dance it took everything in me to not cum right there.

.

#Sphe

*

*

I sat down and kissed her cheek she giggled

Mom: "boy what do you want?"

Me: "how do you feel about getting a second daughter in law" she smiled brightly

Mom: "you thinking of proposing to Amelia" I nodded

Me: "you like her?"

Mom: "I love her she's so sweet and she loves you baby she makes you happy plus I know she's not with you because of material things I can tell"

Me: "I love her mom I really love her" she pulled my cheek

Mom: "speak to your father" I nodded "you've really grown sphelele I couldn't be prouder of you"

Me: "thank you mommy" she looked at me "what's wrong"

Mom: "I'm glad you mine"

Me: "mom?" She shook her head

Mom: "don't try to analyze it"

Me: "okay" Nathan got in followed by Liam

Nathan: "mom tell Sphe to move from my place"

Mom: "sphe move from my son's space"-

Me: "I'm your last born mom you shouldn't be treating me like this" she laughed pushing me I got off the couch went to sit on another couch Nathan sat next to mom

Mom: "Liam where you coming from?"

Liam: "around"

Mom: "Liam when will you grow up hhu? Look at your brothers"

Liam: "mom please don't start"

Mom: "you need to stop behaving like a teenager Liam!"

Liam: "I'm perfectly fine"

Mom: "I will die Liam who will take care of you?"

Nathan: "you won't die mom you can't leave me alone"

Liam: "you won't die"

Me: "yeah mom don't talk like that"

Mom: "I'm getting old and people die it nothing new"

Liam: "mom" she rolled her eyes

Mom: "okay fine be in denial but Liam you need to be serious stop sleeping around" we laughed

Liam: "there so many beautiful women out here I got lot of love that I need to share" Nathan laughed the loudest we all looked at him

Nathan: "sorry"

Mom: "something you need to tell me son?"

Nathan: "nope"

Me: " I need to speak to Hope" I stood up went upstairs found her in her room brushing her stomach she was seriously showing now "you need to stop getting pregnant" she laughed

Hope: "it only my second baby one more then we done we just want them close together after the third I'll tie my tubes" I sat next to her

Me: "I need you to come to the mall with me I need your help looking for a ring"

Hope: "ring?"

Me: "engagement I want to propose" she squealed

Hope: "ooh Sphe I'm so happy for you" I nodded with a smile on my face

Me: "I'm ready for this I know she's still a baby but I Want to marry her sis we will grow together and learn as time goes on"

Hope: "we will go to sandton city when we leave home get her finger size so long"

Me: "okay. I want something simple but beautiful and expensive"

Hope: "yeah her taste is simple and expensive we'll go traditional but big rock"

Me: "I'm scared she might say no"

Hope: "she won't that girl loves you Sphe and you meeting her family was a step in the right direction" I kissed her head then her stomach I got off the bed I went to dad in his study he was speaking to bab'dala Sandile

Me: "good thing I found you both boh Mntungwa" they chuckled

Dad: "what do you want sphelele" I laughed sat down

Me: "I want to give you a daughter in law" they looked at each other

Sandile: "you want to get married to Vuyolwethu?"

Me: "yes"

Dad: "son are you ready for that last I checked you were confused between her and Snakho"

Me: "I'm not confused I was feeling over leaving Snakho now that's over we don't even talk anymore"

Dad: "marriage son? You need to be sure you can't take that child away from her home only to make her cry"

Me: "I won't dad I love her I want to marry her"

Sandile: "okay we will send a letter for a date for lobola negotiations"

Me: "okay thank you" dad smiled

Dad: "I'm proud of you son" I smiled I was really ready for this I needed Amelia as my wife

Insert 16

^

^

#Sihle

*

*

I could see his car at her yard I guess I was a sucker for pain considering how I walked all the way to the gate just to see if he really was at Tracy's house I really couldn't understand why Marcel was hurting me like this I loved him I couldn't stop loving him they got out of the house walked to his car I could tell they were kissing by how close together they were after awhile Marcel got in his car and drive out I watched his car until he drove in the gate he stopped in front of me

Marcel: "why you just standing there? Are you crying?" He got out the car I turned to walk away he held my arm pulled my body to his I gasped as I caught his strong scent Marcel always smelled good

Me: "you hurting me Marcel" I just broke down

Marcel: "tell me what I should do sihle" he sounded so broken I moved my face from his chest looked up at his face he had tears in his eyes "tell me Sihle! Do you think I like seeing you like this? I'm also hurting" his tears dropped he quickly let go of me and opened the car door "get in Sihle" I did so did he he drove up then turned driving back down he drove out the gate

Me: "where are we going?" I wiped my tears

Marcel: "to talk Nosihle"

Me: "I don't want to talk to you Marcel"

Marcel: "tough because we going to talk" I looked out the window I couldn't stop sniffing and crying "stop crying Nosihle!!" I just cried louder

Me: "don't shout at me khanya" he sighed

Marcel: "sorry" we drove the rest of the way with just my sniffs and soft sobs until we got to the hotel we got off the car he held my hand went to look for a room got the key card went up to our floor he opened the door and let me get in first he got in and locked the door

Me: "why did you bring me here Marcel?"

Marcel: "to talk"

Me: "it late dada is going to call or come here" he took his phone ad made a phone call

Marcel: "pops Yeah I'm good Sihle is with me at the hotel I don't know" he chuckled "I know yes ... okay bye" he ended the call put his phone in his pocket "sorted"

Me: "he didn't shout"

Marcel: "why would he Sihle? The only person standing between us is your parents" I looked down and sat on the bed

Me: "we couldn't talk at a restaurant close to home or at home"

Marcel: "why were you crying?"

Me: "I don't have to answer you" he chuckled

Marcel: "would you like something to eat? Looks like we going to be here for the rest of the day" it was already leading towards the night

Me: "are we going to sleep here?" He shrugged his shoulders and took off his jacket and shoes threw himself on the bed he pulled me up making me lay on him he pushed back my braids

Marcel: "you so beautiful"

Me: "you smell like sex" I got off him and he let me

Marcel: "I'll take a quick shower please order some food I didn't have lunch"

Me: "so you had sex with her"

Marcel: "I'm not a virgin nosihle I don't know how you expect me to answer that" I sat up as fresh tears started coming out

Me: "you such a dick Marcel"

Marcel: "ouch"

Me: "take me home Marcel"

Marcel: "I'm gonna take bath" he went in the bathroom I laid on the bed with a sigh before reaching over for the phone I called and ordered some food after awhile he got out with just a towel wrapped around his lower body hanging low "you ordered? I'm starving"

Me: "I did"

Marcel: "okay" he sat on the bed there was just awkward silence the food came we ate in silence after eating I just watched tv he came to sit next to me "we gonna sleep here and leave in the morning"

Me: "okay"

Marcel: "thought you were going to fight me"

Me: "I don't have the energy Marcel I just don't"

Marcel: "you still make me nervous" I fought my smile and it didn't show

Me: "oh" I tried to sound bored and it worked he brushed his face

Marcel: "I messed up"

Me: "I'm not interested Marcel"

Marcel: "I thought I was helping you move on from me"

Me: "how so?"

Marcel: "I just wanted you to hate for awhile and be happy learn to be without me believe me nosihle it was hurting me as much as it was hurting you if not more"

Me: "you told me to move on Marcel, you listened to me crying and begging you to take me back I begged you Marcel and you told me up I have Tracy now you threw your girlfriend at my face"

Marcel: "I love you nosihle"

Me: "just the other day you told Tracy you love her on the phone I heard you" he tried to hold me I moved away "don't touch me" he sighed

Marcel: "please tell me you love me" I shook my head

Me: "no Marcel I've cried so much Marcel I've begged you for so long I fought with my family for us I broke my parents hearts for us and you just show everyone that we fought against that our love is just weak you proved everyone right that we not meant to be together I was at home fighting my parents trying to let me get used to us as a couple but you were out in cape town moving on" I couldn't hold my tears as I thought about how I fought my parents trying to convince them to let us be together but he was busy with Tracy

Marcel: "baby I'm sorry I messed up I know but I thought I was doing the right thing for us at that moment and uncle vuyani put a gun on my head telling me how he is going to kill me if I don't leave you alone. I don't know Sihle but I'm sorry baby I love you Nosihle I love you so much you have to forgive me"

Me: "I don't have to do anything Marcel"

Marcel: "you have to forgive me" I tried getting up but he held me "Nosihle I'm sorry"

Me: "nothing has changed I'm still not 18 you haven't you haven't broken up with Tracy yet you apologizing" he let go off me and stood up went to take his phone from his jean and called her putting the phone on loudspeaker

Tracy: "miss me already"

Marcel: "Tracy I just calls to let you know that I can't continue doing what we were doing"

Tracy: "no Marcel!! Don't do this to me to us"

Marcel: "I'm sorry Tracy I shouldn't have gotten mixed with you in the first place I'm sorry"

Tracy: "I love you damit"

Marcel: "and I love someone else"

Tracy: "don't say someone say her name! Tell me how you in love with your little sister Marcel you sick and twisted and there's no way I'm terminating this baby" Marcel ended the call before she could finish

Me: "you made her pregnant khanya?" I was so disappointed I wasn't even angry

Marcel: "she hasn't done a test there was one time where the condom broke but she took the pill. She's just angry that's all"

Me: "what if she really is pregnant?"

Marcel: "she can't be Sihle you the only person I want to have children with"

Me: "yet I'm not the only person you sleep with" he looked down "what if she's pregnant Marcel?"

Marcel: "the plan was terminating"

Me: "I'm not going to marry someone who has a child with another woman"

Marcel: "you can't talk like that sihle"

Me: "you better pray she's not pregnant or we really done"

Marcel: "so if she's not you giving us a chance?"

Me: "when both our parents are okay with us being together yes but only if you agree to not date anyone else until they okay with us"

Marcel: "okay I'll wait I can wait"

Me: "you said the same last time"

Marcel: "I thought I was doing right by moving on"

Me: "well you only managed to hurt me and put yourself in a mess"

Marcel: "I know" he whispered I stood up

Me: "I'm gonna bath" I went to the bathroom took a shower I got out washed my underwear put on a robe went out I found him watching tv while in bed I went to bed

Marcel: "you gonna sleep in that?"

Me: "I'm not going to sleep naked with you in bed" he gave me a sexy grin

Marcel: "what you scared off"

Me: "nothing" I lied I didn't trust myself around him

Marcel: "I'm not going to do anything you don't want me to do"

Me: "Marcel I'm not going to have sex with you while you were having sex with her just today"

Marcel: "but I took a bath" I looked at him thinking is he really that stupid he quickly put his hands up "I'm joking I'm joking of course we not going to do anything but I do miss cuddling naked with you" I took off my robe his eyes popped out

Marcel: "you look flipping amazing Nosihle you've lost every drop of fat in your body"

Me: "thank you" I got in the bed put my head on his chest he cleared his throat and held me

Marcel: "Sihle"

Me: "mmh"

Marcel: "just one round please"

Me: "no"

Marcel: "feel that" he put my hand on his dick which was at it hardest no lie I wanted him but nah he wasn't about to get some I'd rather punish myself just to punish him

Me: "no Marcel"

Marcel: "eish Nosihle baby please"

Me: "you going to sleep on the couch Marcel"

Marcel: "sorry" we continued watching tv in silence.

.

#Amelia

*

*

I was with Linda and Tracy in my apartment we were back at school just few weeks away from exams then I'd be done with my second year

Linda: "I don't understand what's so special about this dinner date you and Sphe always go out but why did he say dress up"

Tracy: "true it not like it your anniversary or birthday" Tracy had broken up with Marcel she was still crying over it that's why they were at my apartment we were spending a weekend together getting fat and watching Bridget Jones diary and all those soppy movies but I had plans with Sphe that I couldn't get out of

Me: "I don't know but he said I must dress up" I took a finale look at myself on the mirror I was wearing a white strapless badge dress below the knee open around the stomach and nude pink heels my box braids tied in half top bun

Linda: "your eyebrows are too nice" I smiled

Me: "got them waxed and tinted yesterday" my phone rang it was Sphe I answered with a smile on my face "baby"

Sphe: "I'm here about to get in the lift finish up"

Me: "I'm done"

Sphe: "cool" he ended the call I took a finale look at myself out on my dark purple liquid matte lipstick I put everything in my clutch bag the door opened he got in looking so hot in slim fit black chinos with a white shirt and a navy blazer with navy slippers and belt

Linda: "you look so yummy Sphe" he chuckled while I gave her a what the fuck look she shrugged her shoulders and looked down

Sphe: "you look breathtakingly beautiful my love" we hugged he gave me a soft peck

Me: "thank you"

Sphe: "let's get going we got a reservation" he took my hand

Me: "you two don't burn down my apartment"

Tracy: "yes mommy" they laughed Sphe and I left

Sphe: "I told you that you look beautiful right" I laughed

Me: "you did. You really do look yummy my love" we drove the rest of the way listening to music we got to the restaurant had full four course meal over light conversation after dinner he paid we got the weather had changed it was a bit chilly he put his blazer on my shoulders and kissed my head we were taking a walk we got to this place there was a guy playing piano singing he started singing Sands - Vuma there were people watching Sphe went down on one knee I looked at him in disbelief

Sphe: "I've loved you from the first day I saw you 4 years back Amelia I can't even imagine an hour without you in my life, you've turned my life around so much and I'll forever be grateful you make me so happy. I love you Vuyolwam I love you so much you my queen everything I need and more you make me wanna be better wanna do better you give me purpose. I've hurt you I've been stupid but you never turned your back on me instead you loved me harder I pray for you for your love more than I pray for anything I ask God daily to protect what we have to ensure no evil comes between us. I need you in my forever my joy I'm right here in front of you on my knee" he took out a ring box "with a diamond ring on my hand asking for you to let me make you happy to let me love you forever to be your source of happiness to be the father of your future children to be there with you all always I love you baby Amelia Vuyolwethu James will you please make me the happiest man in the universe and marry you. Will you please marry me?" I wiped my tears and just nodded he slid the ring in my finger it was a beautiful pear cut pink diamond ring the rock was so huge he stood up we kissed people started clapping

.
#narrated

*

*

Brian was with his wife in the shower he had her pressed on the shower wall with her legs in his hands spread out as he was banging her hard the sound of the water dropping and their skin clapping and Brian's groans pushed zama closer to her climax after all these years Brian still managed to fuck her brains out after they both crashed they sat down letting the water hit them breathing heavily

Zama: "I love you" he pulled her close and kissed her head

Brian: "feeling emotional" zama giggled

Zama: "don't make fun of me James" he chuckled

Brian: "I wouldn't dream of it ma'Mnguni"

Zama: "come on stand up and pull me up so we can get out of here" Brian stood up helped her stand up they finished bathing got out got dressed Brian kept looking at her he still couldn't believe how lucky he was that she had stayed with him all these years making him whole and happy

Brian: "love"

Zama: "yes"

Brian: "I'm thinking about taking you to dinner"

Zama: "like a date?" He nodded with a smile on his face

Brian: "not like a date but an actual date" zama pushed him playfully giggling

Zama: "don't be stupid" she wrapped her arms around his neck he held her ass grabbing it they kissed "I'd love to go on a date with you hubby"

Brian: "great I'll make reservations at the hilton"

Zama: "ooh you really wanna spoil me don't you James"

Brian: "don't I always spoil you"

Zama: "yes you do" they kissed again "I'll check on the babies" they let go of each other zama went out Brian took his phone he had missed calls from his friends they were planning a surprise trip for their wives just girls trip to Dubai it was Brian's idea zama had been hinting that she wants to go there for some shopping he had a jet he had money he had security so what was stopping his wife from going shopping in Dubai he called vuyani first the two had gotten close after Lusanda died and sabelo betrayed them

Vuyani: "bro I've been calling you" Brian chuckled

Brian: "I know I got a smartphone remember" they laughed

Vuyani: "fuck off"

Brian: "what you need man"

Vuyani: "can't I call you just to check on you I kinda miss you man"

Brian: "I know bro it been a minute I also miss you" there was silence for a few seconds then they both laughed loudly "man we need to hit the strip club these emotions ain't good"

Vuyani: "your wife is crazy remember what happened last time we went to a strip club" they both laughed as they remembered how zama reacted when the wives found out they had went to a strip club all gotten lap dances she burnt all his clothes along with his bmw i8 Sne didn't talk to vuyan for days while the other wives just laughed about it

Brian: "yeah hey that lap dance wasn't worth the money I spent replacing everything"

Vuyani: "true. So I'm thinking when the woman go to Dubai I came there for a little"

Brian: "I'm down with that"

Vuyani: "cool look I got a meeting in 5 we will talk later"

Brian: "shot" they both ended the call Brian got out whistling he went downstairs straight to the kitchen found zama making him breakfast he held her waist and kissed her neck sucking it zama giggled

Zama: "are you really trying to make me pregnant James?" Brian chuckled

Brian: "didn't you go and get your tubes tied lover?"

Zama: "sit I'll dish up for you" Brian was about to sit when the door bell rang he went to the foyer opened it was one of the guards

Him: "sir" Brian nodded and took the letter closed the door he read through the addresses on different letters one caught his eyes it was from an address in mhlanga he opened it he felt his blood boil and his temper raising with every word he read he flipped the table that was in the foyer the vase with flowers fell and broke into pieces zama came to the foyer running

Zama: "Brian!"

Brian: "I'm gonna kill that boy when I get my hands on him I'll hunt him down and I'll kill him zamagcina" zama held his arms his body was shaking

Brian: "he thinks he will marry my daughter!! Over my fucking dead body ma'Mnguni do you hear me over my fucking dead body he better kill me first and he better make sure I'm dead and buried"

Zama: "my love calm down"

Brian: "I'm not going to calm down!! Look at this shit" she cupped his face

Zama: "look at me James" he kept looking all over the foyer "James look at me!!" He did "I'm here talk to me make sense I'm right here I got you" his anger slowly went down but didn't disappear

Brian: "that fuck face sphe's family sent a letter for lobola negotiations" zama's heart dropped she knew Brian won't allow Amelia to get married she also didn't want her daughter getting married at her age

Zama: "monwa.."

Brian: "no zamagcina no!!! That boy is not marrying my daughter I will kill him first I will hunt him down and kill me" zama's eyes widened because Brian really meant what he was saying she knew her husband and she knew when he was being serious and truthful this was it he meant what he was saying

Insert 17

^

^

#Amelia

*

*

I was laying on top of sphe after he proposed we drove to the hotel we wanted to celebrate privately my phone rang it was dad

Me: "daddy"

Dad: "what you doing in a hotel? Put me on speaker" I cleared my throat then put him on speaker

Me: "you on it"

Dad: "sphelele" we looked at each other Sphe cleared his throat

Sphe: "Mr James"

Dad: "what is my daughter doing in a hotel so early in the morning" his calm his so calm that it freaks me out I can tell his angry but his trying to control his anger on the other hand Sphe is panicking he looks like his about to die

Sphe: "hum Mr James I was in the city for work reasons I asked her to meet me here for breakfast"

Dad: "you lying to me boy"

Me: "daddy please"

Dad: "Amelia why are you not in your apartment?"

Me: "daddy don't do this"-

Dad: "I got the letter your family sent Sphe" I looked at Sphe with a raised eyebrow

Sphe: "I see"

Dad: "you not marrying my daughter sphelele"

Me: "he proposed daddy I said yes I'm marrying him"

Dad: "you will not"

Me: "dad please"

Dad: "Amelia I will fly there drag you back home"

Me: "dad I love him and I'm marrying him there's nothing you can do about it even though I really wish you would be happy and give us your blessing but I am marrying him" I ended the call and sighed loudly

Sphe: "you shouldn't have spoken to your father like that" dad called I switched off my phone

Me: "take me back to my place he will be here soon" he looked at me shocked

Sphe: "you serious"

Me: "yes I'm sure right now he has called trying to get air space for the jet" I got off the bed got dressed

Sphe: "you not even going to bath"

Me: "I'll do it in my apartment" he got dressed as well we left the ride was just silence soon enough he was parked in front of my building

Sphe: "will you be okay facing him alone"

Me: "yeah I need to if you here he will just hit you"

Sphe: "yoh! Okay I'm sorry I'm putting you through this"

Me: "don't worry about mom will be here she can handle him" he cupped my face we kissed

Sphe: "I love you"

Me: "I love you more"

Sphe: "don't fight with you dad don't let it get to a point where you feel like you have to choose between him and I"

Me: "I won't" he kissed me again

Sphe: "okay"

Me: "we will talk later" I got off he hooted as I got in the building I turned and waved then I went in straight to the elevator got off in my floor I found Linda and Tracy having breakfast

Linda: "you bitch!!" I showed them my ring they stood up screaming we held each other jumped up and down making noise

Tracy: "he proposed!!!"

Me: "yes it was so sweet you guys I was in tears"

Linda: "Sphe got money that a huge rock"

Tracy: "beautiful huge rock I'm so happy for you Amelia" we hugged

Me: "we will have this conversation tomorrow during lunch on campus right now I need to get ready for my parents"

Linda: "they coming here?"

Me: "yeah Sphe's family sent letter for lobola negotiations dad isn't taking it we"

Tracy: "Sphe is serious about this"

Me: "seems that way"

Tracy: "we will leave you to sort out your issues"

Me: "okay boo" they went to get their bags and left I went to take a bath got out lotioned got dressed in a lose short dress with sandals I tied up the place and had breakfast while waiting for them. Three hours later someone knocked before they got in it was my parents I sighed and stood up I gave mom a hub

Mom: "it going to be okay" she whispered we pulled apart she gave me a soft peck

Me: "you not going to hug me dada?" He opened his arms I walked to him we hugged for the longest time then pulled apart "should I order lunch or we will eat out and talk"

Mom: "order sweetie get me steak and vegetables get your father lamb chops and vegetables as well"

Me: "okay" I took my phone ordered food as mom and I settled down while dad went to look around the apartment probably looking for Sphe "your husband is cray cray" we laughed

Mom: "let him be Amelia you want to get married you his little angel he doesn't know how to deal with that" dad came back and sat down with a huff

Dad: "when did he leave?"

Me: "he was never here dad"

Dad: "Amelia you about to turn 19 don't you want to wait for a little" I smiled shaking my head

Me: "no I don't I love him dad and I want to be with him without having to worry about you checking on my whereabouts I want to be with h openly"

Dad: "you don't have to marry him for that to happen"

Me: "yes I do"

Dad: "Amelia I said no!!!" He stood up

Mom: "Brian we spoke about this getting upset won't help anything" he sat back down rubbed his forehead

Dad: "Vuyolwethu"

Me: "daddy I love him"

Mom: "Amelia darling why do.."

Me: "mom I'm not compromising"

Mom: "don't cut me off listen to me" I nodded "we not saying don't marry Sphe we just saying not now finish school first graduate varsity years are the best years in a person's life you don't need to be held down"

Me: "you married dad on your second year grandma told me you two fought against grandpa I know for sure that you both don't want me acting like how you acted when were put in my position" they looked at each other

Mom: "Amelia Vuyolwethu James are you threatening your parents?" There's the thing with mom she was cool too cool but once she was upset all that coolness goes out the window and I could tell she was going to that point

Me: "I'm sorry that's not what I meant"

Mom: "you will marry Sphe we not against that but you will marry him when you've graduated"

Me: "mama that's no fair"

Mom: "we not saying break up with him we not so don't push us to saying that Amelia we your parents and you will listen to us young lady or they will be trouble"

Me: "yes ma'am"

Mom: "good now I know his still in Jhb call him tell him to come here"

Me: "okay" I stood up went out I called Sphe

Sphe: "baby"

Me: "where are you?"

Sphe: "Hope's house"

Me: "my parents want to see you" he didn't say anything "Sphe"

Sphe: "why?"

Me: "to talk Sphe can you just come I'm really not in the mood"

Sphe: "I'll be there in 10" I ended the call went back in I sat down

Me: "his coming. I'm going to ask just once please please don't do this I'll go on my knees if I have to. I've done nothing but be the proper daughter be a good example to Brianna I've never partied never sneaked out or change boyfriends like panties Sphe is my first boyfriend and I'm 19 he makes me happy treats me like a queen I don't think it gets better than him and I don't want to find out I'm good with what I have now I'm telling you I love him I want to marry him I'm the luckiest girl on the face of the earth don't take this away from me please" they looked at each dad opened his mouth "I said please"

Dad: "Amelia we feel as if you not ready"

Me: "I am ready if this is a mistake it my mistake to make I'll learn from it and move on" mom stood up

Mom: "let's talk Brian" she walked upstairs with dad following her someone knocked I stood up it was the delivery guy I went to take my card paid as he left Sphe got out the lift he looked scared I waited for him at the door we hugged and kissed shortly

Me: "it going to be fine"

Sphe: "yes it is" we walked in he went to the kitchen with me I moved the food to the plate we were going to share my ribs and chops we took the food to the lounge my parents came out Sphe greeted as they sat down we all started eating in silence after lunch I took the dishes to the kitchen went back to the lounge I found dad and Sphe standing up I looked at them

Dad: "we going to talk and take a ride" Sphe looked like his about to shit himself

Me: "dad please"

Mom: "Amelia let them"

Me: "no mom no what if he hit him again"

Dad: "I won't"

Me: "I swear dad I promise you if you hurt him I won't forgive you" I could feel my tears running down my cheeks

Sphe: "it's okay Amelia please don't cry you know what it does to me" he walked to me I threw myself at him and just broke down I sobbed "Vuyolwam please"

Me: "I just can't"

Sphe: "please it's okay just stop crying everything is going to be fine" he let go of me and kissed my forehead mom pulled me to her they walked out

Mom: "he won't hurt Sphe I spoke to him we know you two love each other and want to get married we letting you with our blessings he just needs to talk to him let him know that if he hurts you there will be consequences to that"

Me: "I love him so much mom so much"

Mom: "I know angel I know" she kissed my head and rocked me back and forth until I felt my body giving up.

.

#Sphe

*

*

I watched her sleeping her parent had went out for dinner with her uncle and his wife I played with her hair she had been sleeping for hours after I came back from the drive with her father I took her from the couch to her room I laid next to her watching her sleep until I also fell asleep I woke up when Zama woke me up telling me they were leaving for dinner will be back later. I kissed her pouty lips she smiled

Me: "you sneaky how long have you been up" she opened her eyes

Amelia: "I'm still asleep" I got on top of her she opened her legs willingly I settled between them

Me: "they letting us get married we start lobola negotiations next month first weekend" she smiled brightly then giggled

Amelia: "you gonna be my husband!!"

Me: "and you my wife" we kissed then she pushed me back and cupped my face

Amelia: "we getting married!!! Oh my God" she giggled loudly and it was the sweetest sound ever and it was my ringtone I had recorded her giggle set it as my ringtone it was a sound I could never get over a sound I wanted to hear repeatedly

Me: "you so beautiful and you gonna give me beautiful children"

Amelia: "when I'm ready"

Me: "yes when you done with varsity" we kissed

Amelia: "where's mom and dad?"

Me: "went to dinner with Siya and Mbali"

Amelia: "I want you"

Me: "I'm yours take me" I rolled over she got on top of me I pushed back her braids "you my half Amelia my own mirror I'd die if I were to lose you I'd do anything for you I promise"

Amelia: "I love you" she kissed my neck going down while she unbuttoned my shirt we made love quickly before her parents came back then we took a quick shower got dressed went to sit in the lounge watching tv just as we sat down they got in Amelia giggled softly

Zama: "what were you two up to?"

Amelia: "nothing"

Zama: "Amelia not in our presence"

Amelia: "ewu mom no!" They sat down

Brian: "when are you leaving Sphe?"

Amelia: "dada!"

Me: "now" I stood up took my car keys

Amelia: "I'll walk you out"

Me: "it was great seeing you Mr James and you zama"

Zama: "see you soon Sphe" Brian just nodded I walked out with Amelia behind me we got in the lift and kissed I pressed her on the wall deepening the kiss until the lift stopped at the ground floor we went to the parking I picked her up made her sit on the boot then got between her legs

Me: "can't wait for you to be Mrs khumalo"

Amelia: "I think I'll keep my surname thank you very much"

Me: "Amelia" she giggled

Amelia: "I'm joking. I can't wait to be Mrs Sphelele Ethan Khumalo" we kissed shortly "I love you"

Me: "love you more"

Amelia: "call me when you get to your place"

Me: "okay" I put her down then watched her walking back I got in the car drove off. The whole ride to witbank I was thinking about Amelia being my wife having claims on her I couldn't wait I was excited i kept picturing her on our wedding day looking flawlessly gorgeous in her white dress walking towards me as soon as my mind went to who will be walking her down my body shivered in fear Brian frightened me not only because I knew he could kill with his own hands there was just something commanding respect about him the way his eyes looked at me just made want to run away the Brian I knew was not the Brian Amelia talked about. Just as I parked in my garage my phone rang it was Snakho I don't know why she was calling because I hadn't spoken to her in months after my granny's funeral I took my car back cut her off financially and told her to never call me again but she still called I just never answered her calls I was done with her I was done with everything that would make me lose Amelia I couldn't risk it I loved that girl too much to lose her especially over Snakho who was just in my past. I declined the call got out the car took my duffle bag from the boot I locked my car walked out the garage closed it went in the house locked the door behind me I switched on the light went to leave my bag in my room kicked off my sneakers I wore flip flops went to the kitchen after switching on the tv I made myself a sandwich poured juice went to eat while watching tv I called Amelia

Amelia: "baby" her voice sounded so sexy

Me: "you asleep already?"

Amelia: "yeah have an early class tomorrow"

Me: "okay sleep, I love you"

Amelia: "I know baby goodnight" I cut the call finished eating an hour later I was in bed trying to fall asleep.

.

I was woken up by someone pounding on my door I switched the light on got off the bed put on my slippers went to the kitchen I opened the door it was Snakho

Me: "what the fuck?!!" She pushed me aside and got in

Snakho: "you've been ignoring me"

Me: "leave my house Snakho I told the last time you barged in here that we done whether as friends or whatever else you think we are. Snakho get out"

Snakho: "I need help Sphe I need money"

Me: "I don't care. Go ask someone else for money just leave my house before I drag you out"

Snakho: "Sphe please just couple of thousands I know you have it"

Me: "no Snakho I told you that you need to stop coming to me looking for help now please leave you need to stop calling me as well you going to make Amelia and I fight we in a really good space we getting married" her tears dropped

Snakho: "you marrying her? You fucking asshole!! I did everything for you I dedicated years to you to our relationship taking care of you in everyway and now you doing me like this"

Me: "I don't have time for this I'm going to be late for work my alarm was about to ring" I pushed her out locked the door

Snakho: "you going to regret this sphaelele khumalo my tears don't fall on infertile soul I will make you pay there is no way you marrying barbie I'll make her see the real you I wi..." I put on music on the tv to shut her out I went to my room switched off the alarm got in the shower took a shower quickly got out lotioned got dressed went to the kitchen had cereal I took my back pack switched everything off went out after turning on the house alarm I locked the door opened the garage got in my car drove out going to komati I was a little nervous I wanted to ask for a transfer to Johannesburg.

.

#Amelia

*

*

I knew something was wrong from dad's tone when he told me he was sending a jet to come get me but when I found Marcel in the jet at the airport I felt like crying he opened his arms I got on his lap he held me and kissed my head

Marcel: "there's nothing wrong"

Me: "why would he send a jet for us when we were going to go home in two weeks for the lobola negotiations"

Marcel: "let's be positive"

Me: "if there's something wrong with mom I'll die Marcel"

Marcel: "don't worry Amelia"

Me: "mom and Brianna are not answering my calls" my voice broke

Marcel: "Amelia don't cry" I just cried he rocked "Amelia don't everyone is okay at home" I shook my head

I basically cried the way to izimbali when we got off I ran to the house with Marcel behind me we found Brianna in the lounge

Me: "where are the parents" she stood up ran to Marcel he held her lifting her up she just started crying

Brianna: "mama has been crying for hours dada won't let me get in their room" he put her down

Marcel: "what happened to mama?"

Brianna: "I don't know but the doctor from dada's hospital just went upstairs running" I left them talking ran up Marcel ran past me Brianna was behind us I found the open wide Marcel was by the bed

Marcel: "what did you do to my mother?" We walked closer mom was asleep her face was red

Me: "dad what did you do to mom?" Dad cleared his throat

Dad: "let me walk out Dr Potter" they went out I knelt on the bed

Me: "Marcel take Brianna to her room"

Brianna: "no!! I'm not a kid Amelia I want to know what's happening with mama"

Marcel: "come Brianna"

Brianna: "no" she got on the bed laid next to mom put her head on her chest I just sighed and laid on the other side Marcel sat by our feet I played with mom's weave she had 12 inch blonde curly peruvian dad got in

Dad: "your mother needs to rest"

Marcel: "you haven't answered us"

Dad: "I didn't do anything to your mother I would never hurt her she's my life"

Brianna: "I heard her crying Dada she's been crying for hours and you wouldn't let me in"

Dad: "we just received some news that she didn't take well I can't tell you right now I need her to wake up first then we can tell you together"

Marcel: "what was the doctor here for?"

Dad: "give her something to calm her down"

Me: "you sedated her"

Dad: "what choice did I have Amelia she was hysterical"

Me: "but to sedate her!!"

Dad: "don't you even raise your voice at me I'm not in the mood" he walked out banging the door

Marcel: "his hiding something"

Me: "don't push him Marcel" he got off the bed kissed all our foreheads and walked out

Brianna: "will mama be okay Amelia?"

Me: "yes she will be don't worry" we just sat in silence for hours when I checked Brianna had fallen asleep I could feel my body giving in I pulled the blanket over us and closed my eyes.

When I woke up my body felt tired I was in bed alone the room was dark I slept a lot now days I got off the bed went out went to my room I washed my face rinsed my mouth went downstairs found the whole family eating while watching tv

Mom: "you've been asleep for long"

Me: "yeah"

Mom: "go take your food from the microwave" I went to the kitchen got my food and a glass of coke went back to the tv room sat down started eating

Me: "mama"

Mom: "yes angel" her eyes were swollen and red

Me: "are you okay?"

Mom: "I will be now that all my kids are here"

Me: "can we talk about what upset you so much"

Mom: "after dinner"

Me: "is everyone okay?"

Mom: "yes now finish your dinner" I played around with my food it was rice and beef stew with veggies and salads I wasn't really hungry

Dad: "eat your food Amelia!!" Everyone looked at him shocked

Brianna: "dada!"

Dad: "sorry"

Me: "I'm full"

Mom: "Amelia eat baby even if it a little bit" I nodded by the time everyone finished eating I had taken three spoons I collected the dishes with Marcel's help we loaded the dishwasher then went back to the tv room

Dad: "go do your homework Brianna"

Brianna: "it done"

Dad: "go to sleep"

Brianna: "I still have an hour before bedtime"

Dad: "Brianna just go to your room" he sounded defeated

Brianna: "no I want to know why mama was crying"

Dad: "Brianna please"

Mom: "go on Brianna I'm fine" she stood up and looked at dad

Brianna: "you my favorite but if you make mama cry like that again mmh" she walked out dad just chuckled

Mom: "your daughter"

Dad: "definitely" mom cleared her throat

Mom: "speak Brian I want to go to bed"

Dad: "well vuyani and I have been searching about Sphe's family"

Me: "dad!"

Dad: "I was not about to let you get married into a family I don't know Amelia I wouldn't be your father if I did. We found out his mother is Yamkelani Demus well now Khumalo that means Marvin is his grandfather and Justin and Ray are his uncles"

Me: "I know that" mom kept sniffing and wiping her tears

Dad: "what you don't know is that his mother's family is filled with criminals his grandfather and uncles are not honest people" I shook my head in disbelief

Me: "I understand you don't want me getting married but please don't do this please"

Dad: "I'm not lying Amelia, you want to know why your mother was crying her eyes out? Why I had to have her sedated? It because your fiance's family had your grandfather killed!"

Me: "no!" I stood up "no you lying"

Dad: "yes that shooting that could have killed everyone in this family including us your parents it was his family" I shook my head "they killed Lusanda as if that wasn't enough they killed your grandfather as well we've spoken with you and Marcel about how your grandfather died you've seen how your mother and grandma even your aunt cry every time we go to mthwalume you know what that shooting did to this family"

Mom: "Brian enough" I was on my knees crying I was crying because I knew what grandpa's death did to our family as much as I didn't experience it when it happened but they still suffered because of it, I was also crying because I knew there was no way I was going marry Sphe now even I didn't want to marry into a family that has caused so much pain in my family I love Sphe but my mom was my all

Insert 18

^

^

#Sphe

*

*

I read the sms for probably the 100th time I just couldn't believe I kept thinking I'm asleep but here it was right in front me

I'm sorry Sphe I can't do this anymore I love you but sometimes love is not enough I can't marry you let alone be with you when your family has caused so much hurt to my family

That was an sms from Amelia she had sent it last night her phone has been on voicemail since I got the sms I drove straight to jozi but didn't find her at her apartment

Hope: "I don't know what to do anymore Sphe you've been crying since you got here last night even Hermione cried because her uncle was sad and crying maybe I should call mom" I shook my head

Me: "you know she's just going to stress and want to come here"

Hope: "you missed work because of this Sphe"

Me: "I don't understand Hope we were happy and excited about getting married and now she just does this out of nowhere"

Hope: "I think you need to speak to our parents about this clearly it has something to do with the family"

Me: "why didn't she tell me what hurt is she talking about our families don't even know each other"

Hope: "I'm sorry little brother I really don't know now" she hugged me "that girl loves you Sphe you two will get over this"

Me: "I just don't understand Hope I don't"

Hope: "know what we going home"

Me: "no"

Hope: "yes I am going to look for a flight right now we going home we gonna ask the parents about this clearly there's something they didn't tell you Amelia is not crazy she wouldn't just dump you" she stood up walked out I took my phone called Amelia this time it rang to voicemail I called her again someone else answered

Me: "who is this?"

????: "Brianna"

Me: "you in Johannesburg Brianna?" She giggled

Brianna: "no Amelia is home well not right now she went to mthwalume with mama and aunty sthe"

Me: "why?"

Brianna: "clean grandpa's grave"

Me: "how is she?"

Brianna: "I don't know Sphe but she's been crying mama also been crying and aunty sthe"

Me: "why?"

Brianna: "nobody tells me when I ask, when are you coming to visit again?"

Me: "you should come visit me" she giggled sweetly Brianna was a cute pie she looked like Amelia and her mom

Brianna: "I will ask dada if I can come for one weekend"

Me: "I would love that"

Brianna: "great!!"

Me: "how about you take my number and call me when Amelia is back"

Brianna: "okay" I have her my number

Me: "be good now kiss Madison and Sbani for me"

Brianna: "okay bye bye"

Me: "bye" she ended the call I stood up walked out my room I had a room in my sister's house don't judge Hope and I were really close nobody understood me like her as much as we not blood related "Hope!!"

Hope: "we in the kitchen!!" I went there found her with Hermione

Me: "hello my love" she giggled lifted up her arms

Hermione: "phe phe" I lifted her up she held my cheeks gave me a big wet baby kiss

Me: "again" she giggled and did it again

Hope: "she is eating Sphe" I sat next to Hope she continued feeding her

Me: "you shouldn't have gotten pregnant so early Hope she's still a baby"

Hope: "she's two she's old enough besides I want to get it over and done with so I can get my tubes tied and focus on raising them"

Me: "well at least one of us is having babies"

Hermione: "babies?"

Me: "yes babies my love" I pulled her cheek

Hope: "you should just get Amelia pregnant then there's no one she will leave you" we laughed

Me: "no man she still has 4 years of school then maybe when she is doing her residency if we able to fix things"

Hope: "you will fix things I will make sure of it we fly out at 14:30 I already sent dad a text he will pick us up"

Me: "okay"

Hermione: "fly?"

Hope: "yes baby going to see grandma and grandpa"

Hermione: "papa!!!" I chuckled she was clapping her hands

Hope: "yes baby you gonna see your papa"

Hermione: "ove you papa"

Hope: "and papa loves you too"

Me: "Jesus I want a baby too" hope laughed

Hope: "thought you wanted her to graduate"

Me: "yeah yeah, can I get some food?"

Hope: "continue feeding her I'll make us some"

Me: "where is the nanny?"

Hope: "somewhere around this house probably in the cinema she hides there" I chuckled

Me: "hide?"

Hope: "she has a crush on you so whenever you here she hides somewhere" I started feeding Hermione

Me: "you lying"

Hope: "I promise you" we laughed.

Dad was already waiting for us as we landed Hope jumped on him

Me: "woah pregnant woman"

Dad: "leave my pancake alone" Hope giggled stuck her tongue out as dad out her down "come to papa angel"

Hermione: "papa" she lifted her arms I was carrying her dad took her they got in the car as I loaded the bags in the boot I hadn't brought anything but I had clothes at home

Me: "so I'm driving?"

Dad: "yes you can see I am carrying my angel" I shook my head got in the driver's seat drove off "I love that you home but what brings you here especially you Sphe it the middle of the week and you have work"

Me: "called in sick got the rest of the week off"

Dad: "you two going to tell me what's going on your mother has been worried since I told her you both coming home"

Hope: "we will talk when we get home"

Dad: "should I be worried?"

Me: "did mom bake? I miss those cupcakes"

Hope: "me too"

Dad: "I left her baking you know Nathan is addicted to cake she's forever baking"

Hermione: "nugs mommy"

Hope: "no baby"

Hermione: "pwez"

Hope: "no"

Dad: "what does she want?"

Hope: "chicken nuggets"

Dad: "drive past McDonald's Sphe"

Hope: "no dad"

Me: "okay dad"

Hope: "you guys no she had a snack in the plane"

Dad: "and now she wants chicken nuggets she's a baby let her have what she wants"

Hope: "that's not how you raise a child"

Dad: "last time I checked I had 7 children" I chuckled Hope huffed I looked at them Hermione was snuggled on dad's chest. I drove past McD Hermione was too happy with her chicken nuggets and juice. When I parked outside mom was already waiting by the door

Me: "mommy" we hugged I kissed her cheek

Dad: "thembalam" he gave her a soft peck she took Hermione

Hope: "mommy"

Mom: "so where are my other children? What is wrong? Is everyone fine?"

Me: "everyone is fine mom"

Mom: "you've been crying Sphe please tell me what's wrong?"

Hope: "let's get in" we all got in "Nathan is back from school?"

Mom: "yes he is now tell me what is wrong?"

Me: "Amelia broke up with me"

Dad: "what?!"

Mom: "I thought we were sending lobola in two weeks" I wiped my face before my tears fell Hope brushed my back "Sphelele what did you do?"

Dad: "Sphe I asked you! I specifically asked if you ready and you said yes, everything is planned and ready"

Hope: "he didn't do anything wrong"

Me: "she said it because of what my family did to her family"

Dad: "what?"

Me: "she won't speak to me so I don't know"

Hope: "we were hoping you tell us what is going on"

Mom: "no you need to talk to her she needs to explain because we don't know we didn't even know Amelia up until you introduce her to the family"

Dad: "who are her parents?"

Me: "Brian and zama they both doctors"

Mom: "zama James? Of course how can I have missed it she's her mother"

Dad: "thembalam?" He looked at her confused mom cleared her throat

Mom: "her father is Brian, one of lusanda's friends"

Dad: "oh"

Mom: "yes"

Me: "can you tell me something"

Dad: "but we never did anything to the James family lusanda was just a friend and besides he tries to kill me on my wedding day"

Me: "wait what? How come I don't remember that?"

Hope: "you were still a baby I remember dad being in hospital after the wedding"

Mom: "you remember that your father and I divorced right?"

Hope: "yeah" I nod I didn't really remember but I was told that they once divorced

Mom: "I dated Lusanda turns out he was a thug well he was a lawyer with his own law firm"

Hope: "go mom!" Mom rolled her eyes

Mom: "you so forward Hope, anyway when I broke up with him he didn't take it well. So Mntungwa and I got married again he shot your father"

Hope: "dang mommy you give it good"

Mom: "Hope!!" She threw a cushion at her Hermione laughed "as I was saying before the Mrs over them became extra he got people to kill your father and your uncles took care of him"

Me: "what you mean took care of him?"

Mom: "Sphe please"

Me: "uncle Ray and Justin killed him?" Mom looked down

Hope: "wow that's so unlike them I mean I get uncle Ray his a little dodge but uncle Justin is just too soft"

Me: "I still don't get how this affects Amelia and I"

Hope: "I understand maybe her father might be angry but to a point of you and her breaking up?! It doesn't make sense and he was not her family"

Mom: "well dad did say Brian and all his were criminals"

Me: "Brian is a doctor he has a hospital"

Mom: "dad doesn't lie"

Me: "I am going to see Amelia I am not losing her over something that has nothing to do with us"

Dad: "you right. Go fix this fight for your woman If it meant to be you will work it out"

Me: "can I get a car please" dad threw me his keys

Mom: "I am sorry Sphe this is all my fault I hope you fix things"

Me: "it not your fault mom" I kissed her forehead "I love you" she brushed my cheek

Dad: "come here my love" she gave Hermione to Hope and crawled on dad's lap he brushed her hair "it not your fault thembalam" mom sniffed and snuggled closer

Me: "mom please don't cry"

Dad: "go Sphe I got my wife" I nodded and left I didn't even feel the distance. When I got there I rang the intercom one of the security guards came out from the booth

Him: "sir"

Me: "sup?"

Him: "is someone in expecting you?" Brianna answered the intercom

Me: "Brianna"

Brianna: "I'll open for you" the gate opened I gave the guard a wave and drove in. I parked my car said a short prayer for Brian to not hit me I got off the car walked to the door I rang the bell then opened the door I could hear Amelia shouting as I was in the foyer I walked further into the house

Brianna: "I didn't know you don't want to see him and Amelia don't ever shout at me again okay or I will tell dada"

Amelia: "argh!!!" She turned to go upstairs I cleared my throat she stopped

Brianna: "hi Sphe bye Sphe" she went up the stairs

Me: "hey love"

Amelia: "what are you doing here? You need to leave dad will be back soon"

Me: "I am practically your husband"

Amelia: "we broke up"

Me: "no we didn't"

Amelia: "we did I sent you a text"

Me: "I didn't get it" I walked closer to her she kept backing up until her back met the wall I was standing in front of her

Amelia: "stop making this harder than it is already"

Me: "why should I make it easy for you? Why should I make you breaking my heart easier for you? Why should I make you throwing away everything we've worked so hard for away easy? The years we've spent together" she looked down Me

Amelia: "Sphe please"

Me: "I am not losing you over something that has nothing to do with us something that I don't even remember and I am older than you" I held her chin lifting her face up her tears dropped I wiped them with my other hand

Amelia: "your family killed my grandfather" I looked at her puzzled

Me: "can we please go talk" I kissed the corners of her lips then gave her a soft peck "I love you Amelia. Can we go somewhere and talk" I brushed her lips with my thumb her tears kept dropping "please. I love you we getting married" I kissed her forehead "please" she nodded

Amelia: "okay" we walked out I opened the door for her closed it after she got in I went to my side the house door opened her mother got out running "drive Sphe now please" her mother started coming to us she was screaming for Amelia to get out I drove off in a speed. I drove to the hotel in silence I booked us a room we went up to the room as soon as I closed the door I pushed her to it kissed her deeply and hard she kept moaning I undid her jean buttons pushed them down she kicked off her sneakers stepped out of her jeans I took off mine all without breaking the kiss I lifted her up she wrapped her legs around my waist I walked to the bed put her down quickly took off her vest she wasn't wearing a bra we fucked hard and fast we orgasmed at the same

Amelia: "Sphe" she was still breathing hard I brought her closer to me kissed her head

Me: "can you explain to me what is happening?"

Amelia: "your uncles killed my grandfather"

Me: "how is Lusanda your grandfather?"

Amelia: "uncle lusanda was dad's friend"

Me: "then your grandfather?" She told me everything and I told her what mom had told me

Amelia: "I don't understand why my grandfather was killed"

Me: "there is something that both families are not telling us"

Amelia: "call your parents then we will call mine because I didn't bring my phone tell them to meet us tomorrow here downstairs for lunch"

Me: "we going to sleep here?"

Amelia: "yes"

Me: "why? We broke up remember?"

Amelia: "shut up" I laughed

Me: "can't believe you just broke up with me like that"

Amelia: "I was hurting my mom was hurting and crying grandpa's death really affected the family badly and knowing your family was responsible for that I just couldn't Sphe I am sorry"

Me: "you were supposed to call me and talk to me Amelia to fight for us you just gave up without even giving me a fighting chance"

Amelia: "I am sorry Amelia"

Me: "I cried so much so much Amelia you hurt me so badly I don't know what I would have done if Hope was not there"

Amelia: "I love you Sphe I love you so much it hurts"

Me: "tell me you going to fight for us Amelia"

Amelia: "I will"

Me: "I don't want to marry a weak woman Amelia I need to know you willing to fight your family for us"

Amelia: "I am. Please do not speak like you don't want to marry me anymore"

Me: "after this I am just not sure I can't be fighting on my own" she sat quickly and got on top of me I looked at her she shook her head her eyes twinkling with tears

Amelia: "please do not talk like this, I am sorry Sphe please don't pull the plug on our wedding I love you I want to be Mrs you please just don't do this" her tears dropped I pulled her down to lay on me

Me: "you love me?"

Amelia: "so much so so much"

Me: "good because I am not letting you go and I will fight tooth and nail we are getting married I am paying lobola that weekend nothing will stop that from happening unless Brian kills me" I cupped her face we kissed

.
#Amelia

*

*

I am not going to lie I was nervous I was too nervous I didn't see this turning out good but I was trying to be positive it needed to go good because I needed my family to accept the lobola if there's something that this whole situation made me realize was that I was crazily in love with Sphe and I wanted to marry him. Those hours after I broke up with him were the worst I can't live without him I don't want to have to even try.

Sphe: "you shaking calm down" he kissed my head "there's mom and dad" I looked over his parents walked to us we hugged exchanging greetings and sat down

Yammy: "how you feeling Amelia?"

Me: "I am okay just confused you know there's a missing piece in this story I don't want this tearing me and Sphe apart"

Sphe: "it has nothing to do with us"

Nzuzo: "you right"

Me: "here comes my parents" they were walking to us dad looked angry while mom looked like she had been crying even though she had make up done her eyes were puffy and red

Mom: "hello"

Yammy: "zama" they were just staring at each other

Mom: "Brian take me home, I'm sorry Amelia I can't"

Me: "mom please just sit down so we can all talk about this and try to figure out how to move on"

Mom: "I can't"

Sphe: "zama please"

Me: "please I know it hard for you but please" they sat down

Sphe: "Amelia and I asked you all here because we feel like both families have told us different versions of what happened and even though it shouldn't be affecting us it is affecting us to a point that Amelia wanted to break up with me"

Brian: "she should break up with you"

Nzuzo: "what happened years back has nothing to do with the kids do not bring it to them they love each other they want to get married do not punish them for the mistakes that were made when they were just babies it not fair"

Mom: "my father is died your family killed him it easy for you to talk like that"

Yammy: "what you mean my family killed your father?"

Dad: "Ray and Justin organised a shoot out the yard was filled with our family and friends even children when that shoot out happened we lost Zama's father during it" Yammy and Nzuzo looked at each other Yammy's tears dropped Nzuzo brought her close to him

Nzuzo: "it's okay thembalam don't cry it's okay"

Yammy: "we didn't know we only knew about Lusanda I am sorry I swear we didn't know they never told us but please don't punish my son for things he had nothing to do with. I will go on my knees if need be"

Sphe: "mom please don't and this is not worth your tears you had nothing to do with this just like Amelia and I have nothing to do with it don't waste your tears over this"

Nzuzo: "we really didn't know sorry zama"

Me: "no. Dad did you and the uncles try to kill Sphe's father?" Dad cleared his throat

Dad: "well I didn't know up until it had already happened I would have never had agreed with that"

Me: "don't lie to me"

Dad: "I am being honest" I sighed

Me: "this has nothing to do with Sphe and I we were not there and we don't want to get caught up in it. I don't know how but I hope you be able to work it because we getting married"

Dad: "Vuyolwethu!"

Me: "no dad I am marrying him now it up to you and Mon whether I marry him the right way with your blessings and with the family present or we go to court and you never see me again"

Mom: "don't give us ultimatums Amelia we are your parents"

Me: "I am so disappointed in you both especially you dad you kill people what kind of a human being are you and you have the gut to paint Sphe's family as the bad people yet you just as bad if not worse I pray I really pray that Brianna and Madison never find out about this"

Dad: "Amelia" he whispered I looked at him he looked so hurt mom brushed his back

Me: "no daughter should know these things about her father it not right I've never been this disappointed in you"

Sphe: "Amelia baby" I stood up

Me: "I'm going to go say my goodbyes to my siblings I am going back to my apartment today I hope and pray that two weeks from now we will be having my lobola negotiations"

Mom: "Amelia baby"

Me: "no mom I'm old enough no one is changing my mind" I gave her a soft peck "I love you mom and I am sorry you hate the love of my life but his mine and this is my life" I hugged dad gave him a soft peck "I love you as well dada"

Sphe: "I will meet you back at the house mom and dad but I will be leaving as well today" we had already bought our flight tickets back to jozi

Yammy: "it was good seeing you Amelia I will call you"

Me: "okay mah" we hugged she kissed my forehead Sphe and I walked out as soon as we got in the car I broke down he pulled me to his lap

Sphe: "I love you so much and you were so strong my beautiful beautiful girl we going to get over this and we will get married with their blessings you will see"

Insert 19

^

^

#Amelia

*

*

I woke up excited it took lot of hard work and tears but it was happening I had been praying it goes on without a glitch I could hear the noise in the kitchen as I was going down the stairs I found mom and my aunts there

Me: "good morning" they all greeted back I looked at mom she gave me a fake smile she was not happy and it broke my heart dad was also not happy they hated Sphe's family even uncle Siya was not happy along with uncle Mbiso not to mention uncle Vuyani he threw a fit and said he can't believe dad was allowing this shit to happen

Mom: "eat and get ready your in laws should be here any time"

Me: "mom can we please talk" she nodded and wiped her hands we walked out the kitchen went outside we sat by pool

Mom: "what's wrong?"

Me: "I am sorry I so so sorry I don't even know what to say besides that I love him I truly love him I know it hard for you I know you wish I could just leave him and never look back but I can't and I hate that we are being punished for something we had nothing to do with but I understand it his uncles even though not biologically but it his family they going to be my family as well after today. I am not saying don't hate them I am just saying thank you for allowing this to happen for putting my happiness above yours I know that if you really didn't want this to happen dad wouldn't have allowed it to happen. I know that everyone is angry and disappointed in me it kills me it truly hurts mom all I did was fall in love mom I wish I hadn't loved him the way I love then we wouldn't be in this situation I wouldn't be sitting here crying on a day that I am supposed to be happy on, I wouldn't have to see the disappointment in my own parents eyes because I fell in love with the wrong guy. I'm really sorry mom" I covered my mouth as a sob broke out "I love him I love him so much and I can't be happy on my day because everyone is

against us against our relationship it hurts I never thought I could ever feel this kind of pain and I just don't know what to do" she held me we just cried together "I'm sorry mom"

Mom: "it okay it okay enough now stop crying"

Me: "if I could walk away I would mom believe me I would for you and dad but I know how miserable I will be without him and I will end up resenting you both"

Mom: "it's okay baby don't cry" we pulled apart she wiped my tears then we hugged I felt another set of arms come around us I knew it was dad we pulled apart after few minutes I looked at them both

Dad: "you shouldn't be crying like this now your face is all swollen and red"

Me: "I just hate what this is doing to our family everyone is angry and disappointed"

Mom: "it okay Vuyolwethu we will keep an open mind as you said this has nothing to do with Sphe and you"

Me: "you loved Sphe before mom"

Mom: "and I don't hate him Amelia I hate his uncle what they put my family through we had nothing to do with Luanda but they decided to get message across through my family those bullet could have hit you or your brother even me or your dad even worse all of us"

Dad: " it okay Amelia marry him be happy it all okay as long as his uncles never set their feet in my yard nothing is going to happen and if Sphe ever hurts you in anyway I will be glad to put a bullet through his head"

Me: "dada!" They laughed dad kissed my face

Dad: "don't be sad I don't want to see you crying"

Me: "okay" he gave me a soft peck then wiped my face with his t-shirt

Mom: "go eat and get ready wear that caramel dress we bought yesterday"

Me: "the YDE one?"

Mom: "yes"

Me: "okay" I left them standing there when I was by the door I turned back to look at them they hugging each other dad was saying something I went in went straight to the kitchen

Sthe: "here eat" I took the plate with breakfast

Me: "thank you" I sat down on the high chair and started eating Sihle got in followed by Marcel aunty Sne looked at them with a raised eyebrow Marcel was carrying Sbani

Sne: "sihle"

Sihle: "mom do not start please" she followed Marcel going outside aunty Sne just sighed

Me: "you shouldn't aunty they not together anymore they just trying to spend sometime with Sbani together"

Sne: "are you sure? I don't understand what is wrong with you kids you all stubborn" I shrugged my shoulders

Me: "they not together though they waiting for her to turn 18 that should mean something to you and uncle vuyani"

Sne: "so Marcel has broken up with that white girl?"

Me: "yes"

Sne: "oh"

Me: "you should just let them be together" she sighed

Mbali: "I keep telling her Amelia but she and that big head Vuyani won't hear a word about it"

Sthe: "go bath Amelia"

Me: "okay aunty sthe" I got off the chair went up to my room I was welcomed by Little Mix - Touch, my phone was ringing I ran to the bed it was the ringtone I had set for Sphe

Me: "baby"

Sphe: "why you sound breathless?"

Me: "you knock me over my feet baby" we laughed

Sphe: "you so silly"

Me: "you love me"

Sphe: "whole heartedly, How are things that side?"

Me: "everything is good and that side?"

Sphe: "we almost there we left dumisa late"

Me: "okay baby I'm going to bath and wait for your people to come buy me" he chuckled

Sphe: "and you worth every cent that I am about to pay"

Me: "I hope you got your million ready"

Sphe: "I do" I smiled

Me: "just heard dad paid r250 000 for mom"

Sphe: "and I am willing to pay more"

Me: "I love you sphelele"

Sphe: "I love you more Vuyolwam"

Me: "see you soon"

Sphe: "soon babe" we ended the call I went to the bathroom smiling like a fool the whole time while bathing I would just find myself thinking about him and laughing.

The whole thing went on smoothly I was biting my nails the whole time in my room just praying dad and my uncles behave and they did. When mom got in my room with a smile on her face my heart skipped a beat

Mom: "everything is done come down" I breathed out then my tears just ran down my cheeks she walked faster coming to me I was sitting on the couch she lifted me up we hugged "the worst is over everything from now will be smooth you will see"

Me: "mama"

Mom: "it okay don't cry Amelia"

Me: "I love you"

Mom: "I love you too angel I love you so much you will always be my little girl" she kissed my forehead

Me: "okay let's go" we went downstairs Sphe's family was in the dinning area having lunch with dad and the uncles I couldn't help the nervous smile that spread on my face when I saw Sphe at the table when our eyes met he winked then quickly looked down as I started giggling mom pulled me to the kitchen

Mom: "his yours we know, you don't have to undress him with your eyes" everyone in the kitchen laughed

Me: "mama!!"

Sne: "his good looking" I just blushed looking down

Sthe: "dressed nice as well"

Me: "thank you"

Mom: "eat you hardly ate your breakfast"

Marcel: "I need to send lobola as well"

Sihle: "you should"

Marcel: "think you ready to be my wife" she nodded giggling

Sne: "okay enough jokes" Marcel chuckled

Marcel: "sooner or later aunty Sne you gonna have to accept me as your son in law"

Mom: "tell her son" we all laughed

Sne: "Zama don't encourage them"

Sihle: "encourage us mama" the way she said just made everyone crack up with laughter we were so loud that uncle Siya came

Siya: "behave and tone it down on the wine"

Mbali: "we haven't even started drinking Siya"

Siya: "well behave"

Mbali: "I miss you" her voice got softer uncle Siya smiled shaking his head and walked out leaving us giggling.

I got in the car he held my neck and smashed his lips on mine before saying anything we kissed long and hard when he pulled back I was breathing heavily he pressed his forehead on mine

Sphe: "one step closer to making you Mrs khumalo"

Me: "yes" I whispered

Sphe: "come home with me" it was already night the parents were drinking in the patio

Me: "okay" he smiled widely and sat back

Sphe: "just like that? You not going to make me beg"

Me: "nope" I took my phone out of my jacket pocket called Mom

Mom: "Amelia what do you want?"

Me: "I'm going to sphe's home I'll come back in the morning"

Mom: "you not even going to ask you just telling me. Amelia you two are not married yet"

Me: "mom can I please go to sphe's home for the night?"

Mom: "go Amelia I hope you still going for your injection"

Me: "mama"

Mom: "don't whine"

Me: "I will see you in the morning" we ended the call Sphe started the car and drove off "are your uncles and aunts at your mother's house?"

Sphe: "no they went back to dumisa including the parents it just us"

Me: "okay" I put my head on his she "we got through today without anyone getting shot or guns being taken out" he breathed out and squeezed my thigh

Sphe: "yes"

Me: "now we can start with planning everything else"

Sphe: "get a planner to help out I don't want you stressing you still have school"

Me: "mom will handle it" we fell in comfortable silence just listened to music.

.

#Marcel

*

*

I looked at her and she looked absolutely gorgeous I just couldn't keep my eyes from her she was wearing a white high waist skirt just below her knees it was doing amazing things for her ass and hips the strapless white bra top showed her perfect tiny waist she had a short blonde curly weave it made her face glow I loved her when she was chubby and I wouldn't have stopped loving her but her losing weight was just amazing it gave her such confidence that only added to her beauty. She laughed at something Brianna had said I found myself smiling

Sfundo: "can't stay away can you?" I looked at him and chuckled took a sip of my vodka and lemonade he sat down next to me

Me: "I love your sister man I love her so much" he sighed

Sfundo: "I hate what you did bra" I nodded we hadn't seen each other or spoken since everyone found out about Sihle and I that was two years ago

Me: "I know Sfundo but you also know me so you know I would never hurt her you know she is safe with me"

Sfundo: "I know better you than a stranger I know she's safe with you and you will treat her good plus she gave you that amazing boy" he pointed at Sbani who was busy stuffing his face with cookies along with Madison my son had grown into such a beautiful boy he was very talkative and always laughing

Me: "he really is amazing"

Sfundo: "can't believe Amelia is married" we chuckled

Me: "dude! I thought maybe I would be the first one" we were at Amelia's wedding everything was beautiful my little sister looked like a princess she was and Sphe couldn't keep his eyes off her if he wasn't crying he was kissing her throughout the whole ceremony we were now at reception listening to speeches and music the food had been served everything was going perfect mom and Sphe's mom really went all our with the planning it was just family and close friends sphe's uncles from his mom's side were not here they were not welcomed and it was a good thing they didn't come or this wedding would have turned into a war zone

Sfundo: "why does that chick keep staring at you?" I looked at where he was looking and saw Tracy staring at me when our eyes met she looked down

Me: "it Tracy" he laughed

Sfundo: "sihle hates her with passion"

Me: "I know bru and I don't blame her I would hate anyone who tried his luck with Sihle and I would definitely kill someone who as to even kiss her" things had changed over the past year dad got me a personal trainer and took me to shooting classes we kept it from mom otherwise she would have threw a fit

Sfundo: "good" I shook my head chuckling

Me: "you should be telling me to not sound like a possessive man"

Sfundo: "you do know that if you hurt Sihle you have me and dad to deal with so be possessive and obsessed if you want" I stood up

Me: "I'm gonna go dance with my woman" he nodded I went over to the table they were sitting at "my love"

Brianna: "oh don't start Marcel you will have her later we still talking" Sihle giggled I offered her my hand she took it and stood up

Me: "dance with me" she nodded with a smile I gave her a short kiss then pulled her to the dance floor the reception was in this glass house

Sihle: "when are we leaving?" We were in Mauritius

Me: "the day after tomorrow" she nodded I held her waist brought her closer to me "you look beautiful"

Sihle: "you told me that a thousand times today"

Me: "and I will keep saying it until we go to bed"

Sihle: "your son has fallen asleep" I looked at where Sbani was aunty Sne carrying him he was asleep

Me: "that running around he was doing the whole day" I gave her ass a squeeze she giggled trying to push me off I just smiled

Sihle: "the parents maybe okay with us together but let's not push it" uncle Vuyani finally got over himself and said I can be with Sihle that was few months ago

Me: "wish you could stay longer this distance thing is killing me now"

Sihle: "sorry baby school will close soon I'll be here with you and our son" I kissed her forehead

Me: "maybe I should just marry you then we can stay together"

Sihle: "maybe you should" the Mc made an announcement that everyone should settle down I took Sihle to my table

Sfundo: "eyi eyi go sit with other kids" I chuckled while Sihle pouted everyone else laughed

Sihle: "you not being funny" she sat next to me

Me: "leave my girl alone Sfundo" we listened to Sphe and Amelia say they thank yous then we all went outside threw rose petals at them as they walked to their limousine leaving for the airport they were going on their honeymoon to Paris

Vuyani: "time to get drunk"

Sihle: "daddy!"

Mpilo: "I second that"

Dad: "indeed"

Brianna: "oh God" we all followed them back in laughing the Dj had changed the music to something with a beat

Dad: "come let's show these kids how we used to do this before they decided to come to earth and ruin our lives" mom giggled

Me: "ouch" he pulled her to the dance floor uncle Siya mpilo Ethan and vuyani also pulled their wives they all went dancing

Sihle: "wow"

Sfundo: "what you say beautiful join the folks" he took his girlfriend to the dance floor

Me: "let's get out of here"

Sihle: "okay babe"

Brianna: "God I need a boyfriend"

Me: "I see you want dad to kill you"

Nathan: "would you like to dance Brianna?" I looked at this coloured boy from sphe's family

Me: "voestek fuck off here" he walked away looking down

Brianna: "thats not fair Marcel Sihle and I are the same age I'm 17 for God sakes!"

Me: "slow your role little miss before you get it from me"

Brianna: "arg I'm going back to the hotel"

Me: "we also leaving go get your bags I'll tell mom we've left" I left them going to their table "mama" she moved from dad and held my cheeks

Mom: "my handsome son" I smiled "I love seeing you happy Sihle makes you happy"

Me: "yes. Where is Sbani and Madison?"

Mom: "left with the nanny and mom for the hotel"

Me: "well I am leaving taking Brianna and Sihle with me"

Mom: "please don't make another baby Marcel Sbani is still just a baby and you need to graduate take over at the hospital before you make babies"

Me: "mom please I won't make babies Sbani is enough for now" she gave me a baby kiss "God mother please my girlfriend is here" she laughed loudly

Mom: "oh please your girlfriend has seen me kissing you numerous times"

Me: "I'm gonna go. Have fun with your husband his already throwing daggers at me" she looked at dad and giggled then blew him a kiss he actually blushed and smiles

Mom: "go to your girl let me go to my husband" she left me standing there went to dad he held her waist lifting her up she giggled they kissed I went to Sihle and Brianna we went out I waved for the

driver. We got to the hotel I made sure Brianna is safe in her room that she was sharing with Sihle after that we went to my room I lifted her up she squealed and held my head I locked the door walked over to the bed put her on it

Sihle: "I love you Marcel"

Me: "I know baby and I love you more" I pushed up her skirt she opened her legs I got between them

Sihle: "condom Marcel"

Me: "okay" we kissed deeply

.

Epilogue

~~~~~

#Amelia

\*

It been hard we've had our troubles like any other couples we've had to fight for our love for us to be where we are right now I've had to be a mother to him and a sister before being his wife I've had to compromise put his needs before mine. There was lot of going back and forth before we finally settled in Richards bay. Things got a little complicated when I graduated and he expected us to start a family it took us three years to finally get pregnant he kept reassuring me that it doesn't matter but it killed me slowly Sphe has always loved children he wanted his own that was for sure mom started suggesting we adopt and that's how we ended up with our beautiful daughter Ndalohle she was two when we adopted her only to find out a month later that I am three months pregnant few months later we had our 2nd daughter Minenhle Sphe legit cried it was just amazing a year and few months later we had our boys Uluthando Lubanzi. We went from a house with no kids to basically a creche in a matter of just few years.

Ndalo: "mommy look!!" Her voice is loud and sharp I turned immediately to where she was saying I must look Sphe threw her in the air I held my breath as she splashed in the water they were all swimming with their father

Me: "my love you going to drown my kids"

Sphe: "why would I?"

Minnie: "my turn daddy"

Me: "Sphe don't!" I screamed too late she was already in the air "Sphe please"

Sphe: "okay okay I'll stop"

Me: "and get out of the pool the sun is setting"

Ndalo: "yes mommy" she rolled her eyes Sphe chuckled I stood up

Sphe: "what time are we leaving for dinner?" We were going out for dinner it was the twins 3rd birthday we were going to have a party on Saturday. Sphe and the girls got out of the pool

Me: "we will leave around 19:00. Please tell the nanny to wake up the boys they've been asleep for long"

Sphe: "okay" he knelt in front of me and kissed my stomach my boy kicked he smiled "hey there big boy"

Me: "are you saying I'm fat Sphe?" He chuckled shaking his head

Sphe: "how did me talking to my son became about your weight and you not fat just big" I pushed him he laughed

Me: "he makes me eat a lot"

Sphe: "don't blame my son because you a foodie"

Me: "I hate you" he stood up and kissed me

Minnie: "eeewu daddy no!!" We pulled apart laughing

.

#Sphe

\*

I kissed her jaw line going down to her neck leaving soft bites every now and then she kept moaning softly she was very sensitive every touch and kiss made her shiver and moan I loved pregnancy sex with my wife she screamed as I gently sucked on her breast while playing with the other one

Amelia: "Sphe oh God I ... I .. ca... can't" I bit her nipple lightly then blew cool air on it she shivered

Me: "what you want baby?" I kissed her stomach going down

Amelia: "please .. please" I finally got to my favorite place she was soaking wet I pressed my tongue on her clit she grabbed my ears I looked up at her with a raised eyebrow "please I just want you in I can't take it anymore" I spread her legs wider and slowly entered she was so warm and tight she cried out her muscles tightened around my dick I threw my head back groaning loudly.

I looked at her she had fallen asleep I pushed back her hair and kissed her pouty lips she was snoring softly I brought her body closer to mine

Amelia: "I love you Sphe" she went back to her sleep my heart clenched I savored the moment I was happy completely happy and content with how my life was I've learned to appreciate everything in my life and pray to God thanking him for everything that I have in my life.

.

#Marcel

\*

They say you don't learn from your mistakes you will never learn and that's the best saying ever Lord knows we've hurt each other I cheated on her and she thought it was a great idea to make me pay by cheating her stupidity led to me shooting the fucking ass whole he died. But we moved on from that it was hard after lot of tears, family meetings and counselling we moved on.

Sihle: "what you thinking about?" I smiled and looked at her we were cuddling on the couch while watching tv

Me: "that we have to wake up early tomorrow"

Sihle: "for the twins party?"

Me: "yeah" we stayed with my parents house after I graduated I worked at dad's hospital eventually took over as dad had resigned they just started traveling right now they were leasing a house in Beverly hills

Sbani: "dad?"

Me: "mmh"

Sbani: "can I not go to the party"-

Sihle: "you going"

Sbani: "dad"

Me: "your mom has spoken"

Sbani: "God!"

Me: "why don't you want to go?"

Sbani: "what will I do at a kids party?" Yeah he was 14

Sihle: "you will look after your sisters" we had two beautiful girls twins they were 5

Sbani: "dad! I am not going there to be a nanny"

Madison: "I'll be there Sbani"

Sbani: "I just don't want to go!!"

Me: "boy you better not raise your voice if you know what's good for you"

Sbani: "sorry"

Sihle: "Sbani make me tea" Madison laughed I tried holding my laughter but I failed I just cracked up

Sbani: "seriously!" He stood up went to the kitchen mumbling whatever he was mumbling I kissed my wife's head

Me: "I love you" she looked up at smiling I swear I heard the angels sigh happily we didn't know how this marriage thing works but we were learning as the years go as long as we loved each other and made each other happy we were winning

